



THE UNIVERSITY  
OF ILLINOIS  
LIBRARY

B  
C693lc1



The person charging this material is responsible for its return to the library from which it was withdrawn on or before the **Latest Date** stamped below.

Theft, mutilation, and underlining of books are reasons for disciplinary action and may result in dismissal from the University.

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS LIBRARY AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN

NOV 3 1975

NOV 7 1975

JAN 18 2001

Wks in one,

Wks

530

dsx  
3, 80







THE  
LIFE, ADVENTURES,  

---

AND  
OPINIONS  

---

OF  
COL. GEORGE HANGER.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.



PRINTED BY WILSON & CO.  
ORIENTAL PRESS,  
Wild Court, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London.

THE UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS  
LIBRARY  
LIFE, ADVENTURES,

AND

OPINIONS

OF

COL. GEORGE HANGER.

---

---

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

---

---

To which is added,

Advice to the Prelates and Legislators,  
how to correct the Immorality and  
Jacobinism of the present Age, and at  
the same time increase the Revenue.

Advice to the Lovely Cyprians, and to  
the Fair Sex in general, how to pass  
their Lives in future to their better  
Satisfaction, and to enjoy with Dis-  
cretion the three Cardinal Virtues.

On Matrimony, Compulsive Wedlock,  
and on Polygamy.

On the Misery of Female Prostitution.

The History of the Lovely Ægyptia,  
the Pamela of Norwood, and Paragon  
of the Ægyptian Race; the Author's  
Marriage with her, and her cruel In-  
fidelity and Elopement with a Tra-  
velling Tinker:

And a History of the King's Bench Pri-  
son, written by the Author during  
his Custody under the Marshal of that  
Prison, descriptive of the Miseries en-  
dured by the Prisoners, and the ex-  
travagant Expence incident to their  
Confinement.

---

---

Insanire parat, certa ratione modoque—

Nudus agris, nudus nummis.

HORAT.

---

---

VOL. I.

LONDON,

PRINTED FOR J. DEBRETT, PICCADILLY.

1801.

OPINIONS

COL. GEORGE H. HANCOCK

ADJUTANT GENERAL

1862

10

THE ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE  
WASHINGTON, D. C.  
JANUARY 1, 1862

TO THE HONORABLE SENATE  
OF THE UNITED STATES

SIR:

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 29th inst., in relation to the proposed amendment to the Act of March 3, 1879, relating to the adjutant general's office.

I have the honor to inform you that the same has been referred to the proper authorities for their consideration.

I am, Sir, very respectfully,  
Your obedient servant,  
GEO. H. HANCOCK

RECEIVED  
JAN 1 1862

NOV 1



B  
C693121

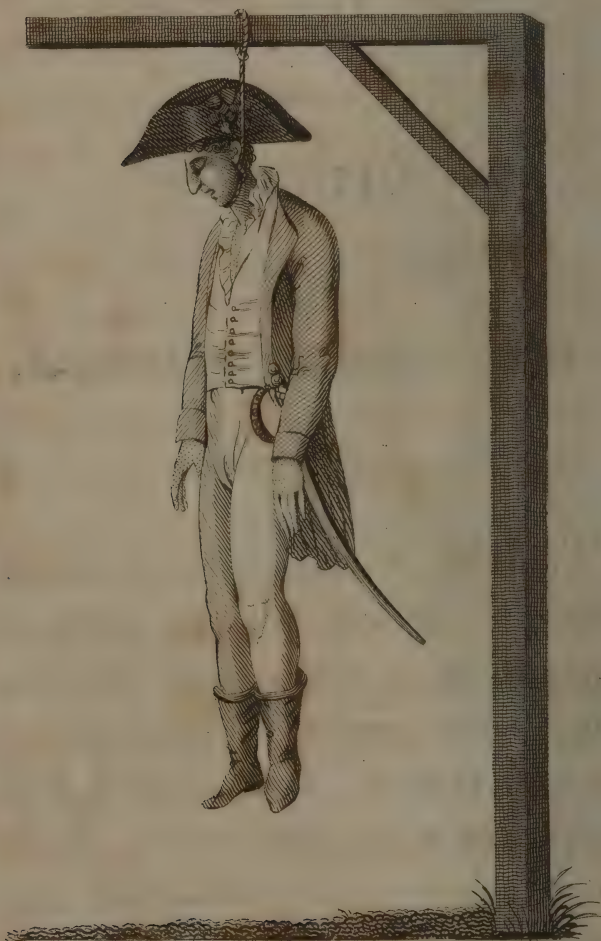
1763982111  
16 Dec 38 1/2  
Source: un known

THE  
LIFE, ADVENTURES,  
AND  
OPINIONS  
OF  
COL. GEORGE HANGER.

---

THE lives of malefactors, in general, are prefaced with a strong outline of their birth, parentage, and education, with other peculiar circumstances belonging to them. As for instance, *A. B.* was born in the parish of —, in the county of —, of reputable and genteel parents; but, falling early in life into

bad company, both of wicked men and  
lewd women, he contracted habits which  
ultimately —————



I shall not descant on the virtues and superior excellence of my parents. They were well known to the world ; and let their characters speak for them. I shall only state with great brevity what I knew of, and experienced from, them.

My father served in three parliaments, and was one of those respectable, independant, old English characters in the House of Commons, called Country Gentlemen ; who formerly had a considerable influence with the Ministers, and to whose judgments and opinions every Minister paid the greatest respect. They were disinterested, honest men, who had no selfish views, and performed their duty to their constituents unbiassed by any party. I wish from my heart the case was the same in the present day. But I lament that, with nine in ten, the



difference is very great indeed ; for when an opulent country gentleman, who never has known London but for a short time together, and solely on his own private business, is chosen member for a county or a great town, he takes a house for the winter, comes to London, and being elected a parliament man, becomes parliament mad !

Now there are two blessings, which, in the nature of things, will be sure to attend him.

First, his wife, for certain, makes him a cuckold.—But more of that hereafter : and,

Secondly, instead of doing his duty to his constituents, independent of any party or prejudice, he allies himself to some

one *faction* or other; and, if the faction which he joins, should chuse to be of opinion that beans and pease are bacon, he gives his assenting voice, and endeavours, wherever he goes, to prove, that beans and peas may be bacon, although they are not positively hog's flesh. As he must join one party or the other, the most prudent step for him to take in these times, is, to join Administration: for, although they want no addition to their forces, yet, I dare say, on his leaving London, after having given a whole winter's specimen of his sincerity, the Minister would not refuse making a seventh cousin of his affectionate and loving wife an Ensign of Fencibles.

He now returns to his country-seat, where he amuses his brother-foxhunters with descanting on the political frugality

of the Minister, the justness and holiness of the war, or the affluence and extent of our trade and commerce. If on the other side, he exclaims against the enormous expenditure of public money, the barbarous massacre of human lives, and the horrid effusion of human blood; the pressure of the taxes, the accumulation of the national debt, and the corruption of the times.

His affectionate wife, to play her part with some eclat, astonishes *the natives* at the county race-ball, on appearing with black eyebrows, a flaxen wig, and half naked, in the London fashion. She invites her gallant to visit her in the country, who generally brings some friend with him to entertain her sister or female confidante. If an officer, he brings a recruiting party into the neigh-

bourhood. The drum and fife delight the servants. The grenadier-serjeant and corporal dance with and make love to the maids in the hall, whilst the Captain and his friend are doing their best to amuse the ladies in the drawing-room. Poor, hospitable Basil, all this time, smokes his pipe, drinks his bottle, entertains his country friends in the parlour with his winter campaign in parliament; while the Captain, who eats his venison and drinks his wine, that he may not be wanting in gratitude, intrigues with his wife. At the end of the summer, the servant-maids have danced themselves into a dropsy with the serjeant and corporal, and retire to their relations to be cured; and the sister, or female confidante, goes on a visit for a few months to some distant relation, either in Scotland or Wales.— Thus passes the summer campaign.



My father never solicited a place; and I am confident he never received a bribe. He purchased the commissions his sons had, during his life: one for my brother, the present Lord Coleraine, in the blue horse, and my own in the guards: both of which I make no doubt but he might have had given him, if he had asked for them, as he was a strenuous supporter of the King and Constitution, though not blindly devoted to the Minister. He was affluent and independent in point of fortune, and had honest pride enough to keep himself so. To conclude my account of him, I believe from my heart he was as honest a man as ever stepped in leathern shoe.

In my mother I have experienced a most affectionate, kind, and tender parent. And thus much for my parentage.

I shall proceed now to my birth, education, and transition through life. I was born at my father's country-seat, in the best bed in the state-room, according to ancient custom. Whether I came headforemost or not into the world, or whether I was born with teeth in my gums, or with hair on my head, it will not be expected that I should determine, having no other record to go by than a treacherous memory: but I am inclined to believe, if I may judge from the length of my nose, that at my birth the midwife committed some indignity to my person. I can, however, assure the reader, that since my godfather and godmother have been released from their baptismal duty, and I have taken upon myself the charge of my own sacred person, I never have been pulled by the nose, or been compelled to soap it.

Many gentlemen of distinguished rank in this country are indebted to the protecting qualities of soap for the present enjoyment of their noses, it being as difficult to hold a soaped nose between the fingers, as it is for a countryman, at a country wake, to catch a pig turned out with his tail soaped and shaved for the amusement of the spectators.

I was early introduced into life, and often kept both good and bad company ; associated with men both good and bad, and with lewd women, and women not lewd, wicked and not wicked ;—in short, with men and women of every description, and of every rank, from the highest to the lowest, from St. James's to St. Giles's ; in palaces and night cellars ; from the drawing-room to the dust cart. The difficulties and misfortunes

I have experienced, I am inclined to think, have proceeded from none of the above mentioned causes, but, from happening to come into life at a period of the greatest extravagance and profusion. Human nature is in general frail, and mine I confess has been wonderfully so: I could not stand the temptations of that age of extravagance, elegance and pleasure: indeed, I am not the only sufferer, for most of my contemporaries, and many of ten times my opulence, have been ruined.

Besides, money was in those days in such plenty, and the money lenders had such implicit faith, that any person of tolerable good character had it for asking for: no writings were ever drawn; and millions were lent upon simple bond and judgment. This made it then much more



easy and convenient for a gentleman to ruin himself, then at present. In these days of difficulty and obstruction, it requires considerable ingenuity and perseverance ; for, with the best security in the world, a man may wear out ten pair of shoes before he can borrow five hundred pounds ; and then must wait a month for the writing to be drawn and approved : in short, for all the wearing and tearing of legal delay.

I was first sent to school at Reading, in Berkshire ; and I beg my friends to believe me, when I tell them that I was a very idle boy, and never could be induced to look into a book until it was forced under the shadow of my nose in the school room : the consequence was, that the tyrannic demagogue, my master, was used to beat me with such cruelty, that,

on the kind representation of my brothers, I was removed from such a scene of barbarous discipline. This tyrant did but seldom use the rod; his favourite instrument was a long rattan cane, big enough to correct a culprit in Bridewell. But this was not all: the savage used to refine on his punishment, and to gratify his infernal feelings by varying the modes of it. The shrieks of the boys who were writhing beneath his blows, were music to his soul. But to the proof:

When ever he found out that two of the big boys had been fighting, he caused them to strip to their shirts in the public school-room: he then gave to each a large bending rattan cane, about three feet long, and ordered them to strike at each other with all their force; while he presided

with a similar weapon, and whenever there appeared to be a relaxation of activity in either of the unwilling combatants, he compelled them by his own violent strokes to renew theirs.

I declare to God, that I have seen wales on the sides, ribs, and arms of boys, of the bigness of my finger. This brute, had he been master of Westminster or Eton, would, in less than a fortnight, have been tossed in a blanket by the upper boys. The fellow had also another pleasant amusement: if a boy had not washed his face very clean, he used to have it rubbed with the coarsest horse-hair cloth that could be made. Some years after, when at Eton school, and a very big boy, I have often wished to be sent to Reading again, that I might

have had the satisfaction of soundly threshing the brutal pedagogue. I declare, on my honour, were a schoolmaster to inflict such punishment on a child of mine, I would cudgel him as long as I could stand over him. A child of mine!!!! Yes—a child of mine shall be treated in a different manner: instead of correcting him when he fights, his tutor shall be ordered to give him a crown every battle he delivers, and half-a-guinea if he is victorious in the combat: and should he beat a boy much bigger and older than himself, he shall receive a guinea. Yet at the same time he shall not be encouraged to fight for the sake of the money to be awarded him, but only to resent injuries. Such principles, instilled into him at an early age, I am convinced will teach him, in maturer life, to resent insults



with a proper spirit, but will not by any means dispose him to be quarrelsome. Take two boys of equal age and equal dispositions : let the one be kept under the master's eye and never out of his sight : forbid him positively to fight, and let all those who strike or insult him be punished severely : let the other mix with his school-fellows, and, if struck or insulted, resent the injury by instantly delivering battle :—the former will contract tyrannical and cowardly habits, which will accompany and disgrace him through life ; and the latter will be bold and liberal, but by no means more quarrelsome than his neighbours. Such characters as the former have I seen even at Eton ;—they were proud, insolent, and cowardly ; and have continued so to the present hour, without any alteration but what years have made in them.

From Reading I was sent to the Rev. Mr. Fountain's, at Mary-le-bone; the present Doctor Fountain was under-master to his father. This was certainly the best school for little boys that ever was. They were treated with the utmost kindness and attention; and with proper correction, but only when it appeared to be absolutely necessary. Mrs. Fountain was the best and most attentive of women to the small boys; she had them every morning in her own room, and made them learn their lesson to her, which prepared them before they went into the school-room to the Doctor. She used to coax them to learn by giving them biscuits and milk, and shewing them various other kindnesses. She might rather be considered as a mother than a schoolmistress to the children under her care. Whatever I learned was from kind and gentle

treatment; for beating would not go down with me. A kind word, and my lesson explained to me, had more effect than all the sticks and rods in Christendom; for I was bold and daring even at that early age.

Before I quit my worthy friends, the Fountains, whom I shall never cease to remember with regard, I must relate a very ludicrous scene between me and the celebrated French tooth-drawer, (or dentist, as I suppose he must now be called,) Monsieur Laudomier, who used to attend at certain times in the course of the year, to examine the boys' teeth, and take out such as were defective. He had drawn out one of mine, which gave me great pain; and wanted to draw another, a ceremony which I did not approve: but the more teeth he drew, the more guineas in his pocket.

Perceiving, however, that I was resolute, and would not consent to a repetition of his operation, he endeavoured to play me a trick, by concealing his instrument in his handkerchief. He accordingly prevailed on me to open my mouth, that he might feel with his finger and thumb whether the tooth was loose or not; but the moment he got his thumb on my under jaw, he attempted to hold my mouth open by force, and had nearly fixed the instrument on my tooth; but I gave him a violent kick on the shins, which rather deranged him, and at the same instant caught his thumb fast between my teeth, and gave him a small item to remember me as long as he lived. I then ran off, leaving him jumping about the room, from excessive pain; and I shall probably be believed when I assert that he never



after that attempted to draw any teeth of mine.

From Mary-le-bone I went to Eton, where I really made considerable progress in my learning; and, by the time I got into the fifth form, I was a very tolerable Latin scholar, and could construe most books with sufficient readiness. But I took a most decided aversion to the Greek language, and never would learn it.

My studies, however, after some time, had a different direction; for, from the moment I came into the *fifth form*, I studied every thing but my book. My hours out of school in the day were employed in the sports of the field, being already very fond of my dog and gun. By

night, game of another kind engrossed my whole attention. At that early period I had a most decided preference for female society, and passed as much time in the company of women as I have ever done since. A carpenter's wife was the first object of my early affections; nor can I well express the nature of my obligations to her. Frequently have I risked breaking my neck in getting over the roof of my boarding house at night, to pass a few hours with some favourite grizette of Windsor. During the latter part of my time at Eton, to *perfect my education*, I became attached to, and was much enamoured of the daughter of a vender of cabbages. Ovid's Epistles were totally laid aside for his Art of Love, in which we made a very considerable progress. The big boys had a very wicked custom every Sunday of resorting to Castle prayers

at Windsor ; not to seek the Lord, but to seek the enamoratas who constantly and diligently attended to receive our devotions. Besides, in summer time, it was our custom to walk in the public promenade in the Little Park. My father lived only six miles from Windsor, and consequently I was as well known to every family in that town, and neighbourhood, as the king himself ; but, notwithstanding this, I constantly walked with some fair frail one arm in arm, with as much *sang froid* as I now would walk in Kensington Gardens with a beautiful woman.

There is no occasion for me to confess all the atrocious sins committed by me at this period, in sanctified as well as unsanctified places ; for I solemnly declare that I have most truly repented of such scandalous crimes, and have every rea-

son to believe that my forgiveness is sealed, although I have not been favoured with absolution from the Pope: nor, were I ever so penitent, is it likely that he would order a general thanksgiving for my repentance, although a former Pope did order one in consequence of the murder of many thousand Protestants on St. Bartholomew's day. Boys commit sins from incoherent giddiness and want of reflection, which they would scorn to perpetrate at a more mature age of improved knowledge. I declare to God, I would sooner cut my hand off than repeat such offences. Although our divines may have no sins of their own which cry for pardon, yet I shall not request them to spend their time so unprofitably as in praying for mine to be forgiven, having reserved that task to myself. Nay, I trust that even the most



antiquated, regenerated, and pious Whitfieldite beldams, too old and ugly to have carnal temptations to sin any more, will attribute those crimes to giddy unreflecting youth, and not be too censorious; for, to use the words of Mother Cole, I myself, as well as they, am new-born.

I made one in the great rebellion, under Dr. Foster, though only in the lower part of the fourth form. Foster was only a schoolmaster. In Dr. Barnard's time, such discontent never would have taken place: he was a gentleman as well as a scholar, and knew well how to make the boys both obey and love him. He was well acquainted with human nature, and governed, not by the rod, but by good sense and a knowledge of the passions. We marched to Maidenhead-bridge; when my father, who lived

within one mile of that place, having heard of the business, sent his groom and a horse three different times in the day to take me home. I had pledged my honour to the boys not to leave them, of which I informed my father; and though he was much incensed against me, I steadily adhered to my promise, and never deserted the cause, to support which I had so solemnly pledged myself. Some disgracefully forfeited their honour, and were never after respected whilst at school; and it yet is an existing blot in their escutcheon of honour. We had also a serious quarrel with the townsmen of Windsor. I was only then in the lower school: but I went up to see the big boys fight; some of whom run away before even a blow was struck, and they have been stamped as cowards from that day to this. Some

few boys I have known to be so timid that they never could be brought to fight even open-handed, and, had they been beat with a lady's thread-paper, would have cried as much as others would have done from an horse-whipping. Those who are cowards at school, ever remain so; age gives experience, but not courage: it is strange, but it is true, that these characters continue to be insolent and overbearing at an advanced period of life; but it is generally to their inferiors, unless they happen to light on some person of consequence who is as noted a coward as themselves; then indeed they are wonderfully bold: but when an inferior has the impudence not to respect their consequence, and resents the injury, sooner than fight, they will make the most abject, mean, and disgraceful apologies,

Such men, as we have daily proofs, are to be found in right honourable families, as well as in the middle ranks of life.

When I left Eton College, I did not go either to Oxford or Cambridge to complete my education, as is customary with most young men. This was a very fortunate circumstance, in which my father shewed his superior judgment. As I had resolved on being a soldier, a German education was best suited to the profession I had chosen. Had I been placed at Oxford or Cambridge, not being of a studious disposition, my health might have suffered from every species of riot and dissipation, which is so prevalent at our universities; and my mind would have remained in the same uncultivated state at my departure as at my arrival, for it is a hundred to one if I had ever

read any literary works except the Sporting Calendar and the Newspaper. I was accordingly sent into Germany, to Gottingen, which is one of the most celebrated universities in the world. The first teachers in every science are to be found there; and public lectures in all branches of learning are delivered by the most experienced and learned professors. But Gottingen is not a proper place, in my opinion, for the character of a young militant (particularly an Englishman). For a soldier, whom no talent, after courage, can recommend so much to the favour of the great world as good-breeding, and elegant and polite manners, is not likely to acquire those fascinating accomplishments from a re-cluse set of learned professors, whose knowledge extends no further than the lectures they deliver to their pupils.



Such societies are too confined and contracted to improve and expand the mind of a young militant. Whilst studying the memoirs of the great Frederick ; while adoring and envying his immortal fame, his tender breast, as yet a stranger to the toils of war, or its hard and dear-earned pittance, pants to acquire inferior honour in the tented field ; and anxiously awaits Bellona's solemn call, to meet the winged messenger of death, or share the laurel on the victor's brow.

There is another material deficiency in such seminaries of learning ; the society of women of the first manners, fashion, and education, without which no mind can be polished, is wanting. The lovely fair ones contribute more to soften our behaviour, and take off our natural

roughness, than all the universities and voluminous libraries in Europe. Twelve months residence, in a polite foreign court, will refine a young man's manners, and bring him nearer to that most desireable and enviable of all characters, a perfect, easy, and fine gentleman, than an age of attendance on the pompous, pedantic, periwigged pride of all the learned doctors of the age, vomiting forth, with volcanic force, streams of Hebrew, Greek, and Latin lava. I would rather sit in company with two or three sensible and well-bred women, than all the Doctor Johnsons that centuries have produced; for a well-bred woman can be guilty of an indelicacy with more grace, than Johnson could put on to present himself before the minister who pensioned him.

There is another defect in Gottingen. There are generally too many English there, who herd together, and, by always talking their own tongue, never acquire a fluency in that of the country, which can only be obtained by associating with the natives.

After applying myself to mathematics, fortification, and the language, for about twelve months, I quitted Gottingen for Hanover and Hesse Cassel; at which places I spent the rest of the time I remained in Germany, which was three years. At Hanover I had the distinguished honour of being patronized, in every sense most flattering to my feelings, by Prince Charles, our queen's eldest brother, a soldier and high-finished gentleman, to whom I

owe a thousand obligations and friendships; and also by that gallant veteran Field-marshal Sperhen, whose distinguished conduct in the seven years war, under Duke Ferdinand of Brunswick, who commanded the allied army, gained him immortal honour, and the love and respect of all Englishmen. The abilities of this brave and able veteran shone with peculiar splendour on that memorable day when the French army suffered a total defeat on the Plains of Minden, where so many thousands of them *bit the dust*. In various other successful conflicts with the French he shared the laurels which so justly adorned the brow of that great General, whose military fame Bellona gladly welcomed and approved, while she justly rated him the contemporary rival of the immortal Frederick.

But the officer with whom I contracted the greatest intimacy, and from whom I received the greatest favour and friendship, was General Freytag. It is not without some degree of vanity that I reflect on a friendship which was formed at so early a period of my life, and lasted to the very hour of his death, which happened about four years ago. This gallant soldier had distinguished himself in the command of a large partizan corps of yagers, hussars, &c. in the seven years war, and is the same Field-marshal Freytag who acted with our troops in Brabant this war, under the command of his royal highness the Duke of York. By the above distinguished character I was introduced to the first nobility in Hanover, and constantly passed my time in the most polite circles.



With the officers I also formed friendships, which have lasted to the present moment.

I was at this time an ensign in the first regiment of British foot-guards; nor could any youth be more attached to his profession than I was. The officers of the Hanoverian guards kindly permitted me to stand in the regiment with them on field days; as did those of the two regiments of light horse. The officers who composed these regiments, had many of them served the whole seven years war in that distinguished corps of hussars commanded by the greatest partizan of the age, General Luckner, who shewed me the same favour, and instructed me also in the discipline of the light cavalry.

Thus I passed my time with the utmost satisfaction, and was daily learning my profession. I attended all the reviews in that country ; and, by letters from officers of distinction to General Saltern, the governor of Magdeburg, I was, through his interest, honoured with permission from the king (the great Frederick) to attend the Prussian reviews near that town. On those extensive plains his majesty reviewed twenty thousand infantry and five thousand cavalry. Every manœuvre which the fertile mind of the great Frederick could devise, was performed by this army, with an accuracy scarcely to be conceived. Two of them attracted my attention above all others. The first was a square, consisting of about six thousand infantry, supposed to be the part of a beaten army retreating over an open plain for many

miles, attacked by five thousand cavalry, in all directions, until they gained the inclosures; when the cavalry desisted from molesting them any further. The second was the five thousand horse, in *one* line, charging, for above half a mile, with the utmost regularity. The three first charges they attempted to perform did not please his majesty: before they had advanced half way, some small irregularity taking place, which, though ever so trifling, could not pass unnoticed by his all-penetrating eye, an aid-de-camp was dispatched to stop them; they went about three different times, and took up the ground again which they before had occupied. The fourth time they made a rapid and correct charge, with which the king was highly pleased, and sent them his thanks. They halted within fifty yards of his majesty; and the whole line, of so

large a body of horse, was as regularly dressed as I have ever since seen one single regiment. Two-thirds of this body of horse were *cuirassiers*; those troops, whose praises the king has sung in the elegant poems written by his majesty at *Sans Souci*. I was favoured with permission to remain in the Prussian camp the whole time of the review, which occupied four days, dining and sleeping in the tent of Colonel Rohr, of the regiment of young Stutterheim, a great favourite of the king, who had served the whole seven years war under his majesty's command. This was a most singular favour conferred on me, and which I am certain was never granted to any other English officer in those days: for it was with the greatest difficulty they could obtain permission, even from a great distance, to see the review, the mounted chasseurs

keeping the ground clear for some miles around. Five thousand cavalry, in one body, is a sight rarely to be viewed in Germany, and what very few British officers ever have seen. The charge they made was beautiful and grand; and the very ground, which was hard and parched by the summer's heat, shook under them.

From Hanover I carried with me letters of recommendation to Hesse Cassel, from the above respectable characters. I was also recommended to General Schluffen, who at that time was minister to his serene highness the Landgrave of Hesse Cassel, by my much respected and ever to be lamented friend, the late Lord Southampton, then General Fitzroy. Between these officers a great intimacy subsisted, from their having both been brother



aid-de-camps to Duke Ferdinand in the seven years war.

Here I made connections in a service in which it was my fate, in a few years, to have the honour of being employed, and to make my debut on the hostile plains of America. Little did I think, when I was first introduced at the court of the distinguished and amiable Prince of Hesse Cassel, that I should ever have the honour of serving in his army.

Hesse Cassel is one of the cleanest and most delightful towns I ever beheld. The new town is built entirely of stone, and, on approaching it from a distance, has a very beautiful and grand appearance.

I shall now, with pleasure, speak of my old companions in war, the Hessian

troops, than whom there are no braver or better disciplined forces in the world. Their discipline is the same as that of the Prussians. In one respect the preference may be given to them, the Hessian regiments being composed all of *landes kinder* (natives of the country), whereas the Prussians have a great number of foreigners in their battalions. They were both of them in alliance with us in the seven years war, and in that of America, and ever behaved with the greatest gallantry and fidelity, and the most sincere *attachment* to the cause in which they were engaged.

The brilliant actions which, early in life, distinguished the present Duke of Brunswick, when hereditary prince, then commanding a detached body of troops from the allied army, under the orders of Duke

Ferdinand, in the seven years war, and have established his fame as a soldier, were performed under his command, by the Hessian grenadiers, some British infantry regiments, and Elliot's light dragoons. The reputation of the Hessian grenadiers is too well known to want any eulogium from my pen. In all times, in all places, in every situation, their conduct and valour have distinguished them.

The Landgrave of Hesse Cassel is a powerful prince. His coffers are well stored, his finances well regulated, and his army in the highest state of military discipline. His Serene Highness, whenever he chooses, can bring forty thousand troops into the field, as good as any in all Germany: there cannot be any better appointed, or better disciplined. At this early period of life, I made a particular

acquaintance with that distinguished character, afterwards so well known to, and so much admired and respected by the British army in America, Col. Donop, who died of the wounds he received in gallantly storming Red Bank, in the attack of which fortress so many of the Hessian grenadiers fell. The attempt to take it by storm failed, although some of the Hessian grenadiers were killed in the embrasures.

My early acquaintance with this distinguished character, led me some years after to decide on soliciting the honour of serving in the Hessian troops, when I quitted the first regiment of foot-guards; the cause of which I shall explain at a proper period. Nor can I in this place be silent on circumstances which were a great impediment to me in my

military career, and early desire to see active service.

From my connections at Hanover and at Hesse Cassel, I could have gone in the suite of the young Prince of Brunswick to join the army of Count Romansoff, then serving against the Turks; but as this would have incurred an expence beyond the income my father allowed me, I wrote home to him, to request he would be so kind as to advance me a thousand pounds; with which he refused to comply, not, I believe, from want of generosity, but from the tender love my mother bore me. He stated my youth, and the wretched climate of the country in which I wished to serve. I am convinced it was from parental affection that he refused me; as I assured him, on my honour, that I would repay him, when of age, from the estate



which he held during my minority. I was much mortified at the refusal, being passionately fond of my profession; and I looked on this as a most favourable opportunity to advance me in it. It would certainly have benefited me much, could I have accomplished this object. To the best of my recollection, the young Prince of Brunswick, brother to the present Duke, lost his life with the Russian army. No part of my life has been so pleasant and agreeable as the three years I passed in Germany. I cannot help remarking with what elegance a person of small fortune may live in that country. In England, with a small income, one can scarcely procure necessaries of life. My father allowed me three hundred pounds per annum, which was fully sufficient for all my expences, and at the end of the year I had always an agreeable overplus.

I shall give two instances of the cheapness of living and of servants wages. I had an extraordinary good servant, who came every morning at eight o'clock to my apartments, and stayed as late at night as I wished. I only gave him one Louis d'or per month, for wages, board wages, and clothes.

While I remained in any great towns, I always dined at the public table d'Hôte, over which some officer of distinction of the garrison presides. Many military gentlemen resort to it, as well as travellers of the first distinction. The dinner reckoning, inclusive of wine, was about fifteen pence, for which were provided two courses and a desert of pastry : every thing else was as cheap in proportion. The hospitality and the open honest character of the Germans, so attached me to the country,

that when ordered home to join my regiment, I quitted it with much reluctance, and absolutely shed tears on my departure.

I forgot to mention in the proper place, that, when I first went to Germany, my father committed the same error as many other parents have done, by sending a clergyman with me to see me settled at the university of Göttingen. I have the utmost respect for this good man, who took the trouble of travelling so many miles to take care of me; for he discharged his duty with every attention and civility. In my humble opinion, clergymen who have never travelled, but have been immured in schools and within the walls of universities, are very ill calculated indeed to travel with a young militant. Their

knowledge of the dead languages is but of little use to them in the polite circles ; and they are as much out of their place at a foreign court, as a dog is in a dancing-school \*. However, it has been much the custom to appoint clergymen in general as bear-leaders to young men who travel.

Two successive summers I went, for a couple of months, to Pyrmont, so well known, throughout Europe, for its waters. This town and surrounding country is the property of the Prince of Waldeck, and is the most beautiful and romantic spot I ever beheld. The walks and rides around it are delightful ; and it is resorted to by people of the first distinction from all parts of Germany. I had the honour of receiving the most

\* I except dancing-dogs by profession.

distinguished civility and protection from the then reigning Prince of Waldeck, and had the happiness of contracting a considerable intimacy with his highness, who was a most amiable and accomplished gentleman. Pyrmont abounds with variety of amusement, and is one of the pleasantest places I know, to resort to in summer. After passing through that most detestable of all countries, Holland, where a traveller is insulted by every species of extortion, and where gold is worshipped more than the Deity, I took shipping for England, having bid adieu to it in the language of Voltaire—Adieu Canneau, Cannard, Canetaille !

Whoever passes through this country, when they come to an inn should always order dinner and supper at so much *per* head: then they cannot be imposed on



much, as the price of wine is well known, and lodging may be valued also. If you think you are charged too dear, you can have redress by applying to the burgomaster. At Delft, forgetful of this precaution, and coming in very late to an inn, I ordered supper, and went in haste to bed, to rise early the next morning and proceed on my journey. There was nothing in the house but eggs and spinnage, and a few slices of dried bacon, and bread and cheese : to this sumptuous regale I added a pint of wine. In the morning the landlady charged me above a pound sterling; and when I complained of the extravagance of the bill, she desired to look it over, and returned it to me with about ten or twelve pence added to it, saying, that she had omitted charging some articles. I went to the burgomaster to complain, who in-

formed me that if I had made an agreement he would have punished the landlady ; but as the case stood, it was not in his power. Another precaution is highly necessary when you get out of the track scoots to go to the inn : if you have a trunk and two or three bundles, put them all into one wheelbarrow ; for, if you are not on your guard when your trunk is in the wheelbarrow, the porters will take each one bundle ; and if it be only so light a thing as an hat-box, you must pay them the same as the man who wheels your trunk.

I will give the reader another instance of the extortion and brutality of the people ; I mean only of the lower orders. If you take a walk out from your inn, and happen to lose your way, and you ask any common person in the

street, which is the way to such an inn? mentioning the sign of it; instead of telling you to turn either to the right or left, his reply is, I will go with you there for a shilling. In France, if you meet the meanest object in the street and ask him such a question, he is overstudious in describing the way. In Holland, you must go into some reputable shop to inquire; or address yourself to some well-dressed man, or you may walk round and round the town and never find your lodgings. Notwithstanding these impositions, the laws in Holland are excellent; and if you are acquainted with the customs of the country, you can ever have redress: and one supreme blessing the inhabitants of this country enjoy; there is no imprisonment for debt, which, with all our boasted liberty, is the curse and disgrace of Old England.

The second part of this Chapter, whose importance, I trust, the world cannot deny, and which, I presume, is already become highly interesting to every reader of taste and discernment, will be found in its appropriate situation in the Second Volume.

## CHAPTER I.

*Advice to the Prelates and Legislators  
how to correct the Immorality and  
Jacobinism of the present Age, and  
at the same time increase the Re-  
venues of the Country.*

IT is the general received opinion of all parties, and of all descriptions of persons in this country, that a moderate and partial reform of parliament would be beneficial to the constitution : but our legislators are of opinion that this is not a proper period for such a measure. It being far from my wishes to make this a political work, I shall reserve my opinion on the subject. But I cannot refrain from giving my sentiments without reserve, and



in very specific terms, on a point far more interesting, and which requires the immediate attention of the legislature; I mean the speedy suppression of the immorality and Jacobinism of this sinful and adulterous age. The vices of the present day require a radical and vigorous reform; the sooner it is effected, the better; for the more corrupt the times, the more necessary is it for our lawgivers to interfere and suppress the prevailing immoralities, by instituting salutary laws of correction, and to enforce a due obedience to the Church as well as the State.

In my humble opinion, no regulation would strike more effectually at the root of the evil, than an especial statute to compel all persons to a more strict attention to the duties of the Sabbath: such

a regulation would be founded in the purest piety and virtue. I am daily in hopes of seeing an act of parliament passed, which, I have been informed, was in contemplation to be proposed to the legislature; and I trust it only lies dormant for a short time from the pressure of public affairs: I mean an act to prohibit any one on a Sunday to walk the streets during the time of divine service, except physicians, apothecaries, and surgeons. This regulation, I am informed, was first suggested by one of our pious prelates. He deserves the praise of every moral, religious, and reflecting person in the land. I pray Heaven it may be immediately enacted! The community must derive considerable benefit—vice and immorality will hide their heads—godliness will supersede impiety—the wicked will be scat-

tered like chaff before the wind, and our clergy will be praised and blessed by the applauding multitude, for thus advancing the vital excellence of the people\*. On this occasion the affridoulanthropic sensibility of that sublime Christian, Mr. W——, cannot be too much commended; for I am informed that his humanity extended even to the brute creation. He judged very properly on a petition from Mr. M——, the celebrated veterinary gentleman, and horse and cow surgeon, who proved to him how much the race of those useful animals might suffer, if their medical attendants were not permitted to visit their patients: besides, after the

\* The man that hung his cat on Monday for killing of a mouse on Sunday, is on record: and we may, with great propriety, add the Methodist, who threw all his beer into the street, because it worked on the Sabbath-day.

labour of the whole week, it would be unjust if so useful a set of men might not be enabled to finish their business by one or two o'clock, so as to enable them to take an innocent lounge on horseback in Hyde Park on Sunday. From the respect which is so justly paid to this truly pious and zealous Christian, the veterinary surgeons were to have been admitted to the same privileges and immunities as the regular physicians, surgeons, and apothecaries.

The petition of these gentlemen was considerably strengthened by the claims Mr. M——, the veterinary surgeon had on the ———, for having very condescendingly stepped so much out of his sphere as to prevent a favourite tom-cat belonging to his Lordship from continuing the exercise of those impurities, which had

been such a scandal to that chaste and pious family.

The petition of Doctor Norman, her Majesty's dog physician, was particularly attended to; (he was to have been privileged equally with the above gentlemen), on account of his having paid the most particular attention to the pregnant state of a she-monkey belonging to Madame Swelenbergen.

Pig doctors, however, were totally excluded: a proof that Government pays but very little attention to the swinish multitude. As for myself, I am of opinion that the swine are most useful creatures, and must confess that I do not think a *pennyworth of pig's meat* a bad thing now and then\*.

\* Morhal says, that the pig is the only animal which can be eaten from the snout to the tail.



I cannot help lamenting that the privilege shewn to the veterinary surgeons did not arise so much from their professional abilities, as from interest and favour for their condescending qualities. But it is in this as in most other occupations. Even in that most honourable profession, the army, though there are many men of merit who rise by the *sword*, yet there are some of very little merit who rise by the *scabbard*.

In these times of impiety and lewdness it would be but proper to forbid all women, under a very weighty penalty, (but most particularly those who have handsome legs,) from walking out on a windy day, without sewing their petticoats down to their shoes, lest a sudden gust of wind, on meeting a prelate, might attract his eyes and derange his thoughts,

which ought only to be fixed on things above.

Women of fashion, so deservedly called modest women, have no thoughts of man in dressing themselves, *poor souls!* and endeavour only to appear clean and decent, every one according to her quality; although I solemnly declare I have seen a modest woman on a warm Sunday in July, in Kensington gardens, with nothing on but a thin linen petticoat (not a dimity one), a smock, and a muslin gown: but who will ever be so censorious as to surmise that this was done to attract the attention of man by any modest woman? I am sure such thoughts never entered into my head, nor did it in the least attract my attention, further than to impress me with a kind apprehension that she might catch cold.

As the prelates have very little to do when in London, if they were to attend all places of public resort, they would then be more able to judge of the many glaring immoralities of the age, and be better qualified to report on them to the legislature. A wonderful deal of good might be derived from such wise and salutary steps: effectual measures might be taken, and on the most indisputable authority, to correct the hydra evil, which stalks, with as many heads as tails, about this sinful town. Thus the morals of this wicked age might be amended:—they are indeed too bad; I speak feelingly: for I myself meet with such temptations every day, from the conduct and appearance of the women, both from what they hide, and what they display, as to irritate my nervous system, and decompose the regular flow of my spirits. In short, from

the universal depravity and Jacobinism of this town, (for be assured that all vice and immorality tend to overturn our Government and the Christian religion,) that I can scarce enter a street in which I do not see something to call up my feelings ; and if some measures are not adopted to correct those indecencies, notwithstanding all the resolution and philosophy I possess, I am fearful I may fall into a way of life which I have hitherto so studiously endeavoured to avoid.

Vice and immorality will never be corrected by the prelates visiting St. James's on court days, where nought but piety, sincerity, modesty, candour, and ingenuousness ever enter : nor by their attending the House of Lords, where the unbiassed legislators do not suffer places and pensions to have the smallest influence

on their judgment or actions. Their time in both these places is as much misapplied, as if they were to preach to a congregation consisting only of clergymen, who, of course, can want no amendment or instruction.

They should bend their steps towards St. Giles's, Wapping, Drury-lane, Field-lane, Chick-lane, Love-lane, and Petticoat-lane. There would they see Satan, with huge strides, walking along in open day, and the daughters of corruption lighted by the children of the sun, (vulgarly called the lamplighters,) to their midnight orgies. If the whole clergy would only take for their copy that much to be respected and pious prelate, to whom all praise is due for his endeavours to banish, from this too sinful Babylon, those indecent Opera dancers, who distort their



bodies in all postures, too shocking for the feelings of modesty and virtue, we then might have some hopes of speedy reformation.

Though great are the sins of this nation, I have considerable hopes in the forgiveness of Heaven; and that under the auspices of a virtuous Minister, we shall shortly be delivered from all our enemies, our misfortunes and miseries. For, as charity covers a multitude of sins, this nation has more claim for forgiveness and mercy than any other; for, in respect to charitable deeds, we have exercised them towards all Europe: as I believe there is not any power of *consequence*, whether *Majestic*, *Serene*, or *Most Holy*, that we have not subsidised.

To destroy vice, to promote modesty,

and at the same time to increase the revenues of the country ; I recommend a fine to be inflicted (according to a man's rank) not to exceed fifty pounds, on every one who should presume to make water against the wall, in the streets: it is highly indecorous ; the ladies never practise any public indecencies of this kind, and why should we ?—are not, logically speaking, our faculties as retentive as theirs ? Besides, wooden houses might be erected in every street, with large vessels to hold this valuable liquid, so much sought after by tobacconists, dyers, farmers, clothiers, and chemists. It being the best manure in the world for land, the parish-officers should be commanded carefully to collect and dispose of this valuable commodity at a public sale by inch of candle, to the great saving of the poor-rates. It might

also be an object of taxation, as it was in former times, and a large revenue might be raised to the state; a small part of which might be applied, with great propriety, to aid the support of the Magdalen Hospital: I am certain, from the immense quantity of this liquor produced by the consumption of gin, porter, ale, wine, &c. the revenue arising from it, (if proper attention was paid to the collection and sale of it,) would in a short time rival the malt tax. Reflect only on the double benefit arising from it; immorality will be corrected, and the state coffers filled. It is an object worthy the attention both of the Bench of Bishops and Lords of the Treasury: and, without any presumption or unbecoming confidence, I do think, that both Church and State are highly indebted to me for suggesting

such an easy mode of advancing the best interests of them both. Whether their Lordships will be of that opinion, I have my doubts; as, according to a favourite proverb of my grandmother, God rest her soul! *The great are seldom grateful.*

I have often lamented the loss of this valuable fluid, that might be made such a source of national wealth, and have frequently turned my thoughts to frame a judicious and saving mode of collecting it, in order to present it to the consideration of the minister. But self-interest, which we all possess (more or less), has prevented me; for, not having the honour even of the slightest acquaintance with him, I was fearful that I might not get properly rewarded; and that I should have been told, as others have been on

similar occasions, that the Chancellor of the Exchequer had the same idea long in contemplation, but, from *existing circumstances*, and the pressure of public affairs, he has not as yet been able to bring it forward.

The distress of my country, however, now obliges me, as a true Briton, to wave every private advantage; and when my plan shall have been adopted, I shall throw myself on the generosity of my country for a reward.

This, I again assert, will be doubly profitable, because a most moral method of increasing the revenue, as female delicacy is so often offended in passing the streets by audacious or absent men, in obeying the dictates of nature. I myself am wonderfully absent at times;



and I will select two instances out of many, which I declare on my honour are strictly true. One morning I had dressed myself, buttoned the knees of my breeches, put my shoes on, and was going out at the street-door, when my servant reminded me that I had forgotten my stockings. Another time I had purchased some books in a shop, the corner of Sackville-street, one dark evening; and taking the candle up to look at others near the door, I opened it, and walked with the lighted candle as far as York-house before I perceived it was in my hand, when I returned, and gave it to the bookseller, who, with the utmost astonishment, was observing my actions.

At this moment it occurs to my recollection, that on the very day I walked

out of the bookseller's shop with the lighted candle in my hand, I had been deeply engaged in calculating the immense increase of revenue that would accrue to the state by a tax on knives, forks, and spoons; which I was drawing out and organizing in proper form to lay before the minister, and which every sagacious and experienced politician will acknowledge to be a sufficient excuse for my absence. This scheme will be of infinite advantage to the revenue of the country whenever it is adopted, which I hope and trust will shortly be the case, to enable us to carry on this just and necessary war.

The proposed tax, if properly levied, not exempting any soul living, not even the infant at the breast, (for he is fed with a pap-spoon,) would be a richer

source of revenue, in my opinion, than any other that could be imagined: for, were people divided into four classes, and the rich compelled to pay according to their abilities; although the poor person paid but a very small proportion, (say half-a-crown only;) yet, by able calculators and financiers, it might be so proportioned, by laying it on thicker and thicker on each class, according to their respective abilities, that it would, without in the least distressing the country, produce one pound *per* head. Thus, from the latest calculations on the population of England, we may be assured of an additional revenue amounting to ten millions. Besides, this tax is founded in the solid principles of political justice: for why, let me ask, should not Government demand a revenue from the vehicles with which we

feed ourselves, as well as from the necessary articles by which we are fed ?

To render this tax more productive and efficacious, every knife, fork, and spoon should be stamped ; and as it is not necessary for any person whatever to use above one knife, fork, and spoon, (for after eating of various dishes they may easily be wiped clean,) all superfluous knives, &c. may be justly deemed luxuries, and should be severely taxed ; which may be readily effected by the tax-gatherers counting noses in every family. The rich, who may choose to keep a superfluity, must pay for them, and can have no grounds for complaint, as they can afford it.

I am certain there are some people in this country who are such thorough Jacobins,

that they would eat with their fingers, and even sup their soup with an oyster-shell, sooner than use a spoon; but they are not numerous: and even then it would be productive of some good; for, by bringing them nearer to a state of nature, in which our forefathers lived, their minds and hearts would be less tainted with immorality. But the act might be so worded as even to deny them the privilege of substituting a shell for a spoon. The words might run thus, when they would have the desired effect: “Knives, forks, spoons, or any other instruments or implements used in conveying food (whether liquid or solid) to the mouth.” Indeed a soldier might, and most probably would, evade this tax, by cutting his meat with his sword, and feeding himself with his bayonet in the room of a fork: but then he must pay for his soup; for it



would puzzle the most expert soldier to find a warlike instrument fit for that purpose.

In addition to the above two productive taxes I shall propose one more, which will in no shape whatever affect the poor, therefore, in my humble opinion, it ought to be adopted ; I mean a tax on all absentee Scotchmen ; on all North Britons, who do not pass six months of the year in Scotland. This we all know would produce a spanking revenue. It has been proposed to tax the absentee Irish : why not the Scotch ? But the money should be wholly and solely appropriated to the disposal of the English treasury, to repay this country, in some degree, for the benefits which the natives of North Britain derive from it. Candour obliges me to pay all due regard to their merits ;

yet I must, in justice to my own country, declare the reason why Englishmen sometimes appear so ridiculous in the opinion of foreigners;—it is this—that we allow our fools to travel ; while, in Scotland, there is an *embargo* laid upon theirs,

It is not, I am positive, from want of attention to their religion that the lower order of people do not frequent the churches oftener. They cannot afford it. It is impossible to get a place in many churches under a shilling ; for in these times, even in the house of God, they take money, as well as in *other great offices*\*.

\* There is no place where the indecency of this custom prevails so much as at the Magdalen Hospital. There are doors contrived which admit but one person at a time ; and two men are placed there, who shove

But, after all, as a man can get an excellent hot meal for eight-pence, a pot of porter for threepence halfpenny, and smoke his pipe with the odd halfpenny, although the shilling laid out in this way may not be of so much benefit to his soul as a sermon, yet it is infinitely better for his body.

Were the bishops to preach in highways and fields, as the methodist preachers do, they would draw together very numerous congregations ; for, where one hundred people attend to a methodist preacher, who is nothing but a journeyman-

their plates in your face, and abuse you if you don't contribute. In short, if the poor girls above could look down and see what is going on below of a Sunday evening, they would be gratified with beholding the counterpart of their old acquaintances, the box-lobbies of the theatres, on the first night of a new spectacle.

weaver, barber, tailor, or a cobbler, one thousand would attend to hear an episcopal preacher. The singing boys from the various charities might be ordered to attend to chant the psalms; and at a very small expence a gallanty show-man might be obtained to attend with his organ, the barrels set to psalm-tunes. I am confident thousands would attend who never go to church, as they would have praying, preaching, and music (which, by the by, the poor people are very fond of) for nothing. The best places I know of in the city for them to perform at, are Tower-hill, Wapping, Moor-fields, the Tenter-ground, Smithfield, and White-chapel. At the other end of the town, the Ring in Hyde-park, the New Road, St. George's Fields, and the fields behind Montague-house, or Chalk-farm; this last to counteract the propagation of Jacobin

principles which have already been sown on this celebrated spot. If any arch-bishop would graciously condescend to mount the black horse at Charing-cross on a Sunday, but he must not sit with his back towards the king, as that would be disrespectful, I would be bound half London would attend him. It might also be productive of great good, if one of their lordships were to attend every Sunday both at the Fleet-Prison and the King's Bench; in which places an excellent and comforting sermon might be preached, taken from the fifth chapter of St. Matthew, verse 26. "Verily I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing;" and all the creditors who listen to the discourse will cry out with a loud voice, "Amen, so be it!" The deans, and other ecclesiastical dignitaries, who, with meek-



ness and resignation, piously await the promised mitre, should, on Sundays, mount the *golden* horse in Cavendish-square, as an emblem of the riches that will one day reward their humility, piety, and zeal for the honour of the Church.

The manner in which the Sabbath is spent is extremely indecorous, and an open violation of all decency. The Sabbath was set apart as a day of rest to man from his labour, which he is bound to devote to religious exercises: and if people fulfilled the duties it requires, they would not find many spare minutes on their hands. After seven-o'clock prayers, they come home to clean themselves and eat their breakfast; for no truly devout person should eat before he goes to morning service, as prayers on an empty stomach operate more power-

fully, and have more effect on the moral diseases of the mind. The day-service begins at eleven, and lasts till near one. From thence till half past four their time would be fully taken up with dinner, and preparation for the evening prayers; after which they will return home to tea. A family sermon, or certain portions of the Whole Duty of Man, will then follow; and the pious family may then retire at an early hour to bed, in order to get up the sooner, on the Monday, to attend their different callings.

But, instead of Sunday being passed in this devout and rational manner; after morning-service is once over, (for people generally think it fully sufficient if they attend divine service once a-day,) both in winter and summer, the streets and Hyde-

Park are so crowded that you can hardly pass along. At night, the ale-houses are brim-full ; and, on a fine summer's evening, the people of fashion stay till it is dark in Kensington-Gardens ; while the trades-people roam about the environs of town, hallooing and screaming, jumping over the hedges, and rolling over the hay-cocks. These horrid impieties should be corrected. I cannot too much admire the purity, virtue, and true religion which the Americans formerly practised, particularly in New-England, whose inhabitants are now so famed for *honour, justice, sincerity, and piety*. In Boston, the Sabbath was held in such reverence, that any person guilty of swearing in the course of it was put in the stocks. The sinful lusts of the flesh also were so abominated on that day, that carnal knowledge even between man and wife

was forbidden, and no bundling whatever was permitted. The severest punishments were inflicted for breaking these laws, not only on the human race, but on the brute creation ; for an unlucky, ill-disposed horse, which on a Sunday broke out of his paddock and got to a mare, was taken to the public whipping-post in Boston, and flogged, according to the Hebrew law, forty stripes lacking one. One of our naval captains was publicly exposed in the stocks, in the market-place at Boston, for swearing on a Sunday, which insult he bore with great patience and submission ; nor did he take the least notice of it until the day that he was to sail for England, when he invited some of the *select men of Boston* to dine with him on board. Whilst at dinner, he weighed anchor, and, after treating them most sumptuously, and assuring them

that he could not possibly leave their country without giving them some *mark* of the sense he entertained of their extraordinary civilities to him, he ordered each select man to receive half a dozen lashes at the gangway, and then put them into their boats, which were waiting alongside, and sailed for England.

True religion is the source of all happiness; and hypocrisy is a base crime, which is detested even by those who practise it.

The clergy, who piously exert themselves to correct the immorality of their flocks, will be objects of admiration to the present age, and receive the homage of ages yet to come. Those pious, learned, and eloquent men, whose labours



have tended to stop the dissemination of Jacobin principles, and consequently to maintain and strengthen the Christian religion, will receive the blessings of future generations.

It is highly probable that the Pope may be taught, by his humiliation, to become more liberal on some particular tenets of religion, and send them his thanks and blessing, which, from a power that has been so long in direct opposition to them, must be highly gratifying to their faith and feelings. Nay, I do not see why it may not encourage them to indulge the hope even of converting his Holiness to the Protestant faith. Nor will it, on reflection, be more surprising for the Pope to change his religion, and, on a vacancy, be made archbishop of Canterbury, (which will not be more than an ade-

quate reward for the conversion of so great a proselyte,) than to have seen his Holiness burned in effigy in the capital of a catholic country : which ceremony was absolutely performed at Paris, before Palais d'Egalité.

At the same time that I point out to the clergy what infinite benefit the country would derive from their laudable exertions in publicly preaching and privately acting true religion and repentance, I would have them be mindful of continuing to practise, as they ever have done, the duties which they preach to their congregations ; and the more they continue to follow the humble path of the Divine Author of our religion and his apostles, the surer they are of having reverence and respect paid to them.—I am not of opinion, because St. John fed upon

locusts and wild honey, that a bishop's chief food should be molasses and cabbage, (which, by the by, is a famous dish in America;) or, because he is a priest, that he should not partake of the good cheer of this world in moderation; or that he should be debarred the innocent pleasures of this life—far be it from my thoughts; nor that he should preach up abstinence and fasting, or spare diet, to the people at large; in which I should be sure of being condemned, not only by the fair sex in general, but by the most rigid prude, to whom I will reply, “ Hold, Mrs. Abigail, I have too much regard for your sex to prescribe such spare diet and lean food\*.” But at the same time I must observe, that I do not think religion so ponderous a virtue, that it

\* Vide Mandeville.

need be drawn in a coach and six horses. Indeed, whenever I see a superabundant degree of state-shew and pageantry in pious processions, it recalls to my mind what a poor half-starved Jesuit said to the grand-master of that order passing by in great state to mass, “*Jesuita, Jesuita, non ita ibat Jesus.*” For the benefit of my fair readers, who, from the present defective state of their education, cannot be supposed to understand Latin, but whose mental and corporeal improvement is the chief, if not the sole, motive which has induced me to undertake this Work, I will translate the passage: “*Our Saviour did not make his entry into Jerusalem in a state-coach.*”

As I am of opinion that the labourer is worthy of his hire, and should be paid according to his real exertions, and not

according to his supposed virtues, I am of opinion that forty pounds a-year to a country curate, who serves four churches on a Sunday, and christens, marries, and buries the whole inhabitants of as many parishes, is not in a rateable proportion to a salary of sixteen thousand pounds per annum paid to a mitred superior, who has only to say a few prayers a few score times in the year. I trust I shall not be suspected of a want of respect to the learned and pious heads of our Church, or of attempting, in the smallest degree, to degrade or lower their consequence, when I most devoutly wish that the benefices of the inferior clergy, who labour hard in the vineyard, may be considerably augmented: for, surely, a stipend of forty pounds per annum will bear no comparison with a revenue of twelve or sixteen thousand. We have it from the first authority, that he



who serves at the altar should live by it ; which he cannot decently do on an income of less than two hundred a-year.

It is not the dances and dancers only that are productive of immorality, but even the operas themselves are incentives to vice, and cause the destruction of female virtue. No person will deny the powers that music has over both the human and brute creation. *Ælian* informs us, that the Lybian mares were excited to love by music. What moral man, after seriously reflecting on this, will ever permit his wife or daughters to go to the opera ? or what decent and virtuous woman will ever request it ? for I assert that music has more power now-a-days, (since the death of *Orpheus* and some other persons, ancient performers,) over the human than

the brute creation, as there is not a fiddler or flute-player in this or any other country, with Signior Pacherotti and Signior Marchesi along with them, who would dare to pass into the den of one of the lions or bears in the Tower; whereas Orpheus charmed all the beasts of the forest. I cannot take upon me to say what respect or reverence wild beasts might pay to eunuchs; for, were they as singularly attentive to them as bears are to real virgins\*, a band of song-scrapers might pass through all the dens of beasts in the Tower, with a few Signior Castrati to draw off the attentions of the beasts from the fiddlers.

\* In Switzerland it is a received opinion, that the most ferocious bear will not hurt a real virgin. I am the more inclined to believe it, as we seldom see a girl of above ten years old carrying provisions to the shepherds on the mountains.

I really think this an experiment worthy the attention of the Royal Society; and whenever I have the honour of being introduced to the president, I shall recommend it to his consideration; conscious, from his having condescended, for the improvement and illucidation of Natural Philosophy, to boil fleas, that he will endeavour to make minute experiments on animals of greater magnitude: so that by his intimate acquaintance with wild beasts, natural philosophers may acquire as perfect a knowledge of the pulsations of a lion or tiger, as the microscopic powers have given them over the heart of a louse; which will be a wonderful acquisition to the journals of the Royal Society, as well as most useful and beneficial to mankind.

But to return to the opera.—How often have I known women delighted beyond conception with the performance of eunuchs, so fascinating are their pipes. We have instances even of women having been warbled into marriage with them. Tenducci, it is well known, married a very charming woman; but she was an Irishwoman—and that amiable nation, both male and female, have an unaccountable propensity to commit blunders.

“ There is a charm

“ Which none but those who taste can tell.”

I have often wondered that no notice has been taken of Mr. Astley's exhibiting his *cabinet of monkeys*; it is a gross reflection on all governments and administrations, and ought to be suppressed; and the exhibition of General Jacko, a severe satire on our General Officers.

Every thing which in the smallest degree is meant to ridicule either State or Church, or the superior orders of people, tends to promote immorality and Jacobinism, and of course to destroy the Christian religion. They should be suppressed. The endeavour to banish these Saltantes, with their libidinous attitudes, finds an example in ancient history: for Tiberius Nero, we read, banished the opera-dancers and players from Italy for the very same reasons; and how pure and immaculate his character was, his biographer *Suetonius* will inform those who are curious on these subjects.

That great personage, however, possessed an advantage which few great personages have possessed. He played upon the fiddle; and he did what few great personages have done—he took a peep be-



hind the curtain : nay, he took a part in the opera ; and therefore must have been able to judge from himself : whereas our divines must depend entirely on the report of others ; as it has never, no, never been known that any one of them has ventured into the gallery of the opera-house, in the pious disguise of a brown wig or a croppy, to judge from the conviction of his own senses.

It is not, however, the opera-dancers and singers alone that I condemn. Our theatres should be corrected, or not suffered to open at all. I would instantly have banished, in particular, those impudent immoral performers, Johnston, Munden, Suet, and Bannister. What scenes of debauchery, drunkenness, and immorality do they exhibit every night to this gaping town ! It is too bad, indeed. They

should be immediately sent to Botany Bay. I would be equally, if not more, severe on some of the female performers. I would have no mercy whatever shewn to that artful baggage Mrs. Jordan. What a mixture of vice and wickedness does she exhibit to our young women of fashion, which, if not suggested by her performance, the innocent creatures would never think of! From her they learn how to impose on a tender and anxious parent or faithful guardian. Does she not, when her guardian instructs her to write a letter to a profligate wicked lover, to forbid him from seeing her face again—does she not, I say, take the advantage of his momentary absence to whip another letter out of her bosom, full of unchaste and fond expressions, and substitute it in the place of the original one; and then laugh at the poor, old, doating dupe, on making him

the instrument of her infamy? And besides, oh horrible! does she not teach young ladies to tread on young gentlemen's toes under the table\*? Oh heavens! how must it shock any moral man to have a young lady take such impudent liberties with him! If any young woman should ever dare to offend my modesty by so indelicate and audacious an act, I swear, by my chastity, that I would not delay a moment in giving information to her parents or guardians, or next of kin, of her disposition to treading, that they might marry her out of hand!

How often have I seen young women of the first fashion delighted to excess at the wonderful skill and powers this seducing actress possesses; in teaching them

\* See the Country Girl.

how to play the jilt and coquette, and completing them in the art and science of intrigue.—In short, so perfect and skilful is she in her immoral instructions on the stage, and so much libertinism has she insidiously represented to our thoughtless young ladies, that no punishment can be too great for her. I know not how to dispose of her properly, unless she were to be sent to France, where she could do no harm ; for there Satan and Sin walk hand in hand.

There is another shocking fellow who should be severely punished ; I mean Lewis ; who, when playing Archer, has the impudence to ask a lady to permit him to take off her garter to bind the thieves before at least two thousand people.

What wanton and indecent songs are daily sung in our theatres ! What pious

or moral person can hear, without blushing, the fashionable air which begins with the following line:

“ I’ll kiss you here by this fair light.”

To kiss a young lady by the light of the moon!—How indecent! Oh! let me plunge the idea deep in night and darkness. But this is not all: It is bad enough to perform such a duet on the public stage; but it does not end there: for, if it should prove a favourite air with the public, and be encored a few times, as it most probably would be, every young lady in the land sings and plays it on the Piano Forte. With what emphasis, expression, and feeling, have I heard grown misses of sixteen or seventeen, sing what I should be ashamed to write, as it would wound the feelings of any decent person to read.—But, alas! so it is, and so it will be—till



my book has been read and studied, and produced all the good effects which I reasonably expect from it.

Then again that impudent, abominable woman, Mrs. Martyr, and in man's clothes, and regimentals, singing—

“ And when in quarters we shall be,

“ Oh ! how I'll kiss my landlady.”

What ! kiss the landlady to pay the reckoning ! Oh, fye ! this is worse even than an officer not paying his quarters at all.

Besides, there is The Beggars Opera ; which ought not only to be banished the stage, but burned by the hands of the common hangman, and as severe a penalty inflicted on any person selling it as on the works of Tom Paine ; for it is equally as productive of disrespect to our present

Government, and the Christian religion. It contains many of the grossest libels on our nobility, people of fashion, and opulent men. For instance :

“ Since laws were made for every degree,

“ To curb vice in others, as well as in me,

“ I wonder we ha’n’t better company

“ Upon Tyburn Tree.

“ But gold from law can take out the sting ;

“ For if, like us, rich men were to swing,

“ It would thin the land, such numbers would string

“ Upon Tyburn Tree.

This is a direct libel on our laws, our constitution, our nobility, and all persons of distinction and opulence. It has the audacity to state, that if a rich man, or a man of family, be ever so guilty, he can purchase his escape from the gallows by dint of gold, in defiance of all law ; and that, in short, none but poor men can be hanged.

Again; seven common women are introduced to Macheath, at one time, who kisses, every one of them on their entering the room. Here is a most abominable scene of indecency, indecorum, and infamy. Then, on the very moment before he is to be executed, and when the gaoler announces two more wives, with a child a-piece, who wish to see him, the unfeeling monster, without the least compassion, either for the women or the tender babes, and with a bold effrontery and unfeeling heart, tells the gaoler to inform the sheriff's officer that he is ready ; and goes with as much composure to the gallows, as a long-haired, blear-eyed methodist would go to the tabernacle\*. The whole is too shocking.—But the worst is yet to

\* Archbishop Herring preached a course of sermons against this detestable Opera. And be it known that I respect his memory for it.

come. I mean Foote's comedy of the Minor. This is by far the most impudent and profligate performance ever produced on the stage. All the scandal, debauchery, and fraud, of a common brothel, is publicly exhibited before our virtuous and chaste wives and daughters. An old notorious procuress avows that she has procured a virgin nymph from the country for a nobleman, who is to be introduced to her after she returns from the holy tabernacle that evening. When Loader has the infamy to ask her to tip the peer an old trader, and let his friend, the baronet, have the girl; Lord! Mr. Loader, replies the old bawd, where do you think to go when you die? So that hypocrisy is added to complete the scene of infamy, for the amusement, instruction, and improvement of pit, boxes and gallery.

Then the pious apostle of reformation, and founder of the Tabernacle, Doctor Whitfield—the very corner-stone—one of the most substantial pillars and props—the very arch of religion,—to be publicly ridiculed on the stage! Oh! what an abomination! And then to represent his holy tabernacle as a receptacle for bawds and profligates, which never was polluted with unhallowed breath, and where none but the purest and chastest zephyrs blow! Then how doubly cruel and wicked, and illiberal, to turn into ridicule on a public theatre a natural defect of this sanctified character, under the ludicrous name of Doctor Squintum, because he had a whimsical kind of look that serious people would call a cast in both eyes! All this is wicked in the extreme; nay, what is worse than wicked, it is ungentlemanly. But to return to



the heroine of this shocking piece—She is made, after describing the beauty of the deluded nymph, to exclaim, with uplifted eyes;—"that *three* such lovely tender chickens would, in one winter, make her fortune!" But let me hasten from a scene which makes me shudder as I contemplate it.

The pious Prelates of former ages were industrious in using every exertion in their power to suppress all stage-performances. Not only divines, but laymen, both ancient and modern, have, by their writings, endeavoured to suppress plays, as well as other amorous and unchaste works. Clemens, Romanus, Nazianzen, Tertullian, Ambrose, Jerome, Lactantius, Augustin, and others of the early Christian teachers; the Fourth Council of Carthage, and divers other councils. Bab-

ington, Hooker, Perkins, Downham, Williams, and all other commentators on the seventh commandment, have condemned and forbid the writing, printing, selling, or teaching any amorous, wanton play-books, histories, or heathen authors, especially Ovid's Art of Love, Catullus, Tibullus, Propertius, Martial, Plautus, and Terence. Osorius also condemns them. Æneas Sylvius, afterwards Pope Pius II. strongly reprobates them ; and Ignatius Loyola, the founder of the Jesuits, forbade the reading of Terence to the youth in all the public schools under the direction of that learned and holy order.

The Jews even, so notorious for their uncleanness, did not permit their youth in ancient times to read the *Canticles*, till they arrived at thirty years of age, for

fear they should turn the spiritual passages which it contains to a carnal sense, and make them instruments of inflaming their own lusts ; and for the same reason *Origen* adviseth such as are of an *amorous temper* to forbear reading that work of Solomon.

It is not to be wondered at, that so much immorality and Jacobinism prevails during the present time in this country ; when, in this sinful Babylonian London, our plays, replete with love, intrigue, and deceit, are so constantly resorted to by both sexes, as well as our operas, where the dancers display such wanton, lascivious attitudes, which are too indelicate for any moral person to behold but with disgust.

Our youth, both male and female, are also educated in a manner so repugnant

to decency, religion, and virtue ! The girls, from their infancy, read nothing but romances, novels, and tales of love ; while the boys, in learning the dead languages, study the heathen poets, who certainly were inspired by Satan, or they would not have drawn their very gods in such monstrous characters, carrying debauchery and adultery to the very throne of Jupiter. Our youth might be as soon perfected in the dead languages, without ever being permitted to study the heathen authors, if some of our learned men would take upon them to translate into the dead languages some pious and moral books : for instance, Baxter's Shove to a Heavy-breeched Christian ; a Heel-piece to a Limping Sinner ; Huntingdon's Bank of Faith ; with various other works of equal instruction and piety.

With poetry they might be supplied by translating into heroic verse Tillotson's and Sherlock's Sermons, Pope's Essay on Man, and Young's Night Thoughts. And for variety, which is so necessary to education, the Rolliad and Probationary Odes might be converted into excellent Latin lyrics. Then, indeed, might we live in hopes of seeing the golden age revived, and those pure and simple manners, which characterised that celebrated period, universally practised. But if a stop be not speedily put to the licentiousness of the present times, we may shortly expect to see the brutality of Tarquin, and the ravishing of the Sabine nymphs, publicly exhibited on our theatres, and openly acted to the life; when the corners of every street would be decorated with the following play bill:—



This day will be performed, at the Theatre-  
Royal, a new Play,

intituled,

THE RAPE OF THE SABINES.

Romulus, — Mr. Kemble;

Remus, — Mr. Pope.

Principal Ravishers :

Mr. Johnston, Mr. Incedon, Mr. Barry-  
more, Mr. Dignum, Mr. Munden, Mr.  
Bannister, Mr. Fawcett, and Mr. Hull.

Sabine Nymphs :

Mrs. Siddons, Mrs. Jordan, Mrs. Powell,  
Mrs. Pope, Mrs. Maddocks, Mrs. Crouch,  
Mrs. Martyr, Mrs. Davenport, &c. &c.

To which will be added, an After-piece,  
intituled,

THE VIOLATION OF LUCRETIA.

The part of Tarquin - by a Noble Lord.  
Lucretia, by a distinguished Lady of Fashion.

Being their first appearance in those  
characters.

As custom makes every thing familiar, we might expect to see both our wives and daughters attending these criminal spectacles with as much *sans froid* as they would view a Lord Mayor's shew.

These horrors would also be made the subject of common chit-chat at morning visits and tea-tables: and the very first thing uppermost in the thoughts of our female children, in the morning at breakfast, would be the entertainment of the preceding evening; and the mother's opinion asked concerning the performance and merit of the actors and actresses, with as little reserve as on the most moral subject.

In former pious times, various saints, lawgivers, rulers, and divines, have written with the utmost abhorrence of plays and theatres. Tully and Plutarch de-

nominate them the bane of sobriety, and excitations to lewdness. Theodosius the Great, in Antioch, shut up the theatres, as the fountains of all wickedness, and the nurseries of all mischief. The emperors Valentinian and Gratian, and Valens, enacted, “That stage-players should be debarred from the sacrament, as long as they continued on the stage; and that it should not be administered to them in their extremity, and when on their death-beds, though they most earnestly desired it, unless they first renounced their lewd professions, and protested solemnly that they would not return to it in case of recovery\*.”

The emperor Justinian published an edict †, “That all Christians should re-

\* Vide Codex Theodosii, lib. xv.

† Justin. Cod. l. i. tit. 6. De Episc. Lex. 17, 18.

frain from acting and beholding stage-plays, because they were not the least of *those pomps of the devil* which Christians solemnly renounce at baptism."

Saint Chrysostom calls stage-plays the *devil's solemnities*, or *pomps*; *Satani- cal fables*; *diabolical mysteries*; the *impure food of devils*; *hellish conventicles* \*; and, in his sixth homily on Matthew, he says, "God never taught men to play, but the devil, who hath formed jests and plays into an act, that by them he may draw the *soldiers* of *Christ* to himself." I could add five hundred quotations to the same purport, as the writers in the early ages of Christianity have formed a favourite branch of my studies; but those already given, will,

\* Hom. de David & Saul, tom i. col. 115. de Ver-  
bis Isaia.

I presume, be thought fully sufficient by every candid reader.

Happy, thrice happy am I, that a pious prelate has revived the subject; as the clergy have too long lain dormant on the wickedness of the stage; and I trust the legislature will second his exertions. He shall ever have my zealous, though feeble support, in his laudable endeavours to suppress the immorality and indecency of our theatres—nay, for the suppression of the theatres themselves.

My brethren, let me therefore exhort you to give a pious attention to my precepts: follow my example; turn from these scenes of vice, and forbid your wives and daughters to frequent them; for, if we have no better morals than to feed our lambs with the milk



of goats, we must look to the time when our flocks will become rank. The carrion crow will not banquet on sweetmeats ; nor will the innocent dove feast on a carcase. Let, then, the doves of grace avoid, as they would carrion, these tabernacles of the devil, in which the actors are his chaplains. Let them shun these abominations, if they expect hereafter to roost in the eternal pigeon-holes. Brethren, why do ye go one day unto the house of the Lord; and the next day into a den of thieves, for so I may justly call our play-houses, where we are robbed of all relish for spiritual objects : they bring a scandal on religion, the Sabbath into contempt, men's souls into danger, and the State into Jacobinism. Brethren, we have sins sufficient without these aggravations ; for they of late are come on this abominable Babylon, like unto a land-flood,

sweeping away our morals and piety, as the deluge, inundating a peaceful village, carries away both cattle, pigs, poultry, cats, dogs, rabbits, and rats, and every thing before it. Let us build, therefore, unto ourselves an ark in which we may float, and avoid the sinful deluge that shortly will overwhelm, and ultimately destroy, a brave, but profligate, nation.

Brethren, I wish to imprint deeply on your minds the words of the celebrated Mr. Stephen Gosson, a repentant stage-poet, who says, in his *School of Abuse*, printed in 1578, "That his eyes had shed many tears of sorrow, and his heart had sweat many drops of blood, when he remembered stage-plays, to which he was once so much addicted." This penitent stage-poet farther writes, in 1581, "I will shew you," says he, "what I saw,

and inform you what I have read of plays. Ovid said, that Romulus built his theatre as a horse-fair for whores; made triumphs, and set up plays to gather fair women together, that every one of his soldiers might take where they liked a snatch for his share. It would seem that the abuse of such places was so great, that for any chaste liver to haunt them was a black swan and a white crow. Dion so strictly forbiddeth the ancient families of Rome, and gentlewomen who tender their name and honour, to come to theatres; and rebukes them so sharply when he takes them napping, that if they be but once seen there, he judgeth it sufficient cause to speak ill of them, and to think worse. The shadow of a knave hurts an honest man; and the scent of a stew, an honest matron. Cooks do not shew more art in their junkets to van-

quish the taste, nor painters in shadow to allure the eye, than poets in theatres to wound the conscience. There set they abroad strange concerts of melody to tickle the ear, costly apparel to flatter the sight, effeminate gesture to ravish the sense, and wanton speech to whet inordinate lust. These, by privy entries of the ear, slip down into the heart, and with gun-shot of affection gall the mind. *Domitian* suffered players and dancers so long in theatres, that *Paris* debauched his *Domitia*, and *Menster* did the like by *Messalina*. *Ovid*, in his *Art of Love*, chargeth his pilgrims to keep close to the saints whom they serve, and to shew their double diligence ; to lift the gentlewomen's robes from the ground, to prevent their soiling in the dust ; to sweep moats from their kirtles ; to keep their fingers in use, to lay their hands on their backs

for an easy stay; to praise that which they commend; to present them pomegranates to pick as they sit; and, when all is over, to wait on them mannerly to their houses. In our playhouses in London, you shall see such heaving and shoving, such itching and shouldering, to sit by women; such care for their garments, that they be not trod on; such eyeing their laps, that no chips light in them; such pillows to their backs, that they take no hurt; such whispering, in their ears, I don't know what; such giving them pippins to pass the time; such playing at foot-saunt without cards; such ticking, such toying, such smiling, such wishing, and such manning them home when the sports are ended, that it is a perfect comedy to mark their behaviour, and is as good as a course at the game itself to dog them a little, or to follow aloof by the



print of the feet, and so discover by slot where the deer taketh soil. If this were as well noticed as it is ill seen, or as openly punished as secretly practised, I have no doubt but the cause would be seared to dry up the effect, and those pretty rabbits ferreted from their burrows. Not that any filthiness is committed within the compass of that ground, as was done in Rome ; but that every wanton and his paramour, every man and his mistress, every Jack and his Joan, every knave and his queen, are there first acquainted, and cheapen the merchandize in that place, which they pay for elsewhere as they can agree. I design not to shew you all that I saw, nor half that I have heard of those abuses, lest you should judge me more willing to teach than to forbid them."

Such is the description which the repentant stage-poet, Mr. Stephen Gosson, gives us of the various wickednesses performed at the theatres in his time. My brethren and friends, let me ask your own fearful consciences, whether many of us in these present days have not been guilty of the same unhallowed actions? Have we not taken hold of women's tails? Have we not unhallowed our bodies, by making them unchaste pillows to lean against? Have we not kept our fingers employed in their laps; whispered them, and given them pippins to pass the time? Have not we played at foot-saunt with them? Have we not tricked, toyed, and smiled, and winked, and manned them home, and traced them by their footsteps, as the dog sloteth the deer? Have we not pursued these rabbits to their burrows?

Let me exhort you, therefore, my brethren, to turn away with me, and Mr. Stephen Gosson the repentant stage-poet, from these paths of darkness, and lead a new life. I trust you will follow my example, and quit these scenes of wickedness. But if you will not be admonished of your own destruction, either by repentant stage-poets, or by the regenerated Mr. Stephen Gosson, or by me, you will not surely refuse the evidence of Bishop Babington on the Seventh Commandment, and Dr. Layton in his *Speculum Belli Sacri*.

Whoever frequents these chapels of the devil, the theatres, will constantly behold a most despicable race, without any principle of honour; box-lobby loungers and harlots, a miserable sect, without any sense of shame, and at once displaying their

vulgar folly and wanton impudence.—

Let the legislators assure themselves, that, without speedy redress, all things will grow so much out of order, that they will be past remedy.

One strong instance of the effects of dancing, on the passions of men and women, I shall offer to you, my brethren and friends, as related by Xenophon\*, who gives us an account of the acting of Bacchus and Ariadne by a Syracusan boy and girl. I do not wish to make a silly parade of my learning, and shall therefore present it in plain English.

“ The Syracusan boy entered, in the character of dancing Bacchus, with a piper before him playing a tune. Then enter-

\* *Convivium apud Xenophon.*

ed Ariadne gorgeously apparelled like a bride, and sat down before the company. She did not go to meet Bacchus in a dancing movement, nor did she rise from her seat; but made such signs as discovered he might have an easy conquest. When Bacchus beheld her, he expressed his passion as much as possible in his dance, and, drawing near her, fell down on his knees, embraced and kissed her: she, though with some faint resemblance of modesty, embraced him again. At this the spectators gave shouts of applause. Then Bacchus rose up, and taking Ariadne in his arms, there was nothing to be seen but hugging and kissing. The spectators perceiving that they were both handsome, and that they kissed and embraced in earnest, beheld them with great attention, and, hearing Bacchus ask her if she loved him, and she affirming



with an oath that she did, the whole audience swore that the boy and girl loved one another in reality, for they did not act like those who had been taught only to personate those gestures, but like such as had a mind to perform that which they had for a long time earnestly desired. At last, when the company perceived that they were clasped in one another's arms, those that had no wives swore they would marry, and those who were married turned home to their wives."

I again repeat it, and it cannot be repeated too often, that the theatres are nought but the chapels of Venus and the Devil's brothels: there Satan reigns in full glory; though he has not personally appeared in any of them, at least as we know of, since the reign of Queen Elizabeth: then he visibly appeared to

the whole audience and actors in the *Bell Savage play-house*, as they were profanely acting the story of *Doctor Faustus*, to the terror and amazement of all the spectators, and the *throwing* some of them into a state of *distraction* \*. I most sincerely wish that Satan would renew his frolics, and appear once more, *in propria persona*, on our stages ; but particularly at the opera-house, amongst those wicked and immodest dancers, that they might all be seized with distraction ; for, I much fear, nothing else will prevent a continuation of their immoral and indecent gestures : and that wicked jade Mademoiselle Parisot would meet with no more than her deserts, if he were to give her ten or a dozen hearty smacks with his tail, to make her remember those

\* Vide Hist. Mastin. p. 556.

attitudes, so repugnant to modesty, which she so wantonly displays. This is my most devout wish; though it is rather unreasonable to expect that the cloven-footed gentleman will act in such direct opposition to his best interests as to comply with it. He will, I apprehend, leave matters as they are, and I must proceed in my honest endeavours to root out the evil as well as I can, without such an able assistant.

## CHAPTER II.

*Advice to the lovely Cyprians, and Fair Sex in general, how to conduct themselves in future, and to practise with greater satisfaction the three cardinal virtues, namely, Drinking, Gaming, and Intriguing.*

I AM perfectly convinced of the defects that prevail in the education of the loveliest part of the creation: but, however desirous I may be to correct them, and point out the errors in which they are brought up, I am convinced that it never will be in my power; for, were I to write a treatise on female education, founded on the purest principles of virtue, morality and religion, which would cer-

tainly be my object and endeavour ; yet, if it were not announced under the sanction of some eminent divine, I do not believe that there is a mother in England who would permit their daughters to read it : nor is there a boarding-school in or round about London, or elsewhere, in which the mistress would not sooner admit any of the modern lascivious novels, than a Treatise on the Improvement of Female Education, by Colonel George Hanger ;—so true is the proverb, “ Give a dog a bad name, and you may as well hang him.” But I, ye lovely fair, mind not what your mothers say or think of me ; for those censorious antiquated bel-dams are only, like the dog in the manger, envious of your more youthful charms. They wish, by depreciating the character of any man who so truly adores the sex as I do, to deter you from enjoying those



those pleasures which they themselves wish for; and sure I am, that they would rather see a total decay of the *Arts and Sciences*, than be excluded a share in the patronage. When hunted by bailiffs, the blood-hounds of unrelenting usurers, and their more rapacious attornies; how often have I secreted myself in the house of some fair one, or with her fled the town, to some distant scene of freedom and security! When I have experienced that balm to a distracted mind which female converse only can impart, although oppressed by anxious care, and sinful poverty (that worst of crimes), give me but health, and the affections of some kind sympathising fair one, and I will oppose a sea of troubles. Oh woman! all care relieving woman! thou art the true physician to the sickly mind: a Warren or a Jebb

may ease the body sinking with disease and pain; but the heart rejects their art, for love defies all Esculapian power. Yes, ye fair! I own those pleasing tortures you inflict; nay more, I glory in the bondage in which you have held me, by having a heart obedient to your charms—No doctor's hand, convulsive to the touch of gold, can heal those wounds you give; but one endearing smile restores to life and happiness your dying suppliant. Thanks be to Venus, you possess a sovereign antidote to your poison: for Telephus with his magic spear never had more power to heal than you. Oh Cytherea, and thy Paphian nymphs, be generous, be kind, be propitious to my call!—Ye beautiful fair, to whom all nature yields and bends the knee, whose power the soldier dreads more than the hostile foe in battle

fierce, strike deep your dagger in my breast; but, oh, in pity heal me with your smiles! First kill, then cure; first bind the lover fast, then loose the silken band. Draw, oh draw your Cytherean arrows to the head, and whirl them from the twanging, Paphian yew, to pierce the lover's breast! but, in compassion, quickly close the combat, or the sad wretch in misery expires!

It would give me the most heart-felt satisfaction, could I be numbered in the honourable list of those who have been instrumental to the expansion of your minds, the promotion of your happiness, and the refinement of your morals. A perfect amendment cannot be effected by any other means than a total alteration in the system of your education; for you are taught, from your infancy, to belie

your thoughts and wishes, and to vow that you have not the smallest propensity to those objects which are your chief delight and pleasure. These wishes, your education, whether at home, or in that seminary of wholesome instruction called a boarding-school, teaches you to smother.

As we have very little hopes that the system of your education, defective as it is, will be altered, I shall attempt to instruct you how to make the most of your circumstances, such as they are, and to turn them to the greatest advantage. I will endeavour to teach you how to enjoy the pleasures and delights of life, that your days to come may be more satisfactory and beneficial.

It is a bold and arduous task, I avow; but

friendship and affection commands me to attempt it. There are some delights in life which are essential to it, yet it may not be altogether prudent openly and daringly to avow them; for truth is not to be spoken at all times. Be mindful, therefore, ye lovely fair, who have any regard for your characters, and are tenacious of that respect of the world which is so much sought after; be ever mindful, I entreat you, by that regard and affection I have for your welfare and happiness, that it is not so much for what women do that they suffer, as how they do it. With good conduct and discretion, and by following good advice, (such as I shall give you,) I do not hesitate to assert, that you may enjoy more real and solid happiness, than by rashly plunging into the fatal gulph of luxury and dissipation. Then be, with caution,



bold:—the proverb is vulgar, but none more true, that “ *the silent sow sucks the most grains.*” Let me, therefore, recommend moderation to you in the enjoyment of every thing. Excess is ever destructive both to health and happiness, even in things most salutary; for excess of pleasure is often productive of excessive pain. There is no excuse to be pleaded for your indulging to excess in any thing; except at such times when the ablest physicians tell us that women have longed even for poisonous things, and have taken them without the smallest detriment to their health or constitution; though, at any other period, they would have caused instant death.

Two very singular instances of this nature have come to my knowledge:—A

very delicate woman, who at other times could not be prevailed on to drink above one glass of wine after dinner, suddenly drank two bottles, which had no more effect on her than if she had drank so much water. The other is still more extraordinary ; but I declare it to be an *absolute fact* :—A woman longed for a three-legged joint-stool, which she totally devoured, and it passed off without any inconvenience or detriment in her health. Had she longed for a may-pole, at so particular a time, it would have made no difference. I assure the reader I am serious, and that I am well informed of the truth of these two singular cases. Certain it is that even the most noxious and poisonous ingredients may, at those peculiar times, be taken into the human body, without any detriment to the con-

stitution; yet I am not so ridiculously credulous as to believe the assertions of a woman who said she longed for charcoal when she was brought-to-bed of a black child.

It is equally necessary that you should attend to your finances as to your health, although there is nothing more detestable than a mercenary woman, except a mercenary man. Yet I would not have you undervalue or despise money as much as the celebrated Kitty Fisher\*. Indeed, in these days, notes of that value are not so plenty; for scarcely do I ever see a note of one hundred pounds.

I applaud the generosity of your minds

\* She ate a hundred pound bank-note between two slices of bread and butter.

in attributing the scanty and ungenerous donations of your friends to the distress of the times, and their real want of cash : but you are deceived ; that is not the real fact : it proceeds from nothing but a cursed sordid avarice, and the want of true generosity. Our legislators assure us, (and who can know so well as they ? and whom ought we to believe but them ?) that our country is in the highest state of affluence, that it is in a most flourishing situation, and that our trade and commerce increase daily. I trust you will, as well as me, implicitly believe their assurances ; for, although sometimes I see artificers who tell us they are obliged to enlist as soldiers for want of employment, and though I read the weekly list of bankrupts, I do not give credit or attention more than is justly due to them ;

for I am certain those workmen are only a set of idle rascals who will not work, and their masters lazy, indolent fellows, who prefer idleness and beggary to opulence and industry. Money is now more abundant in this country than was ever known at any other period. The Royal Exchange of London can scarce support its wealth. Tell your ungenerous friends this ; they cannot deny it : you are sanctioned by your senators, in whom it is your duty, as well as that of the whole nation, to place an implicit confidence. Yet I would not have you follow them, or exactly imitate them, in your system of taxation ; for if you should adopt the same method with your individual friends as they have with the public at large, I am afraid you will find as many persons, in proportion to the number of



your acquaintance, swear off\*, by which your income will be deficient nearly two-thirds; and I am afraid even your *commerce* will *perish*.

There are three predominant passions

\* Relative to the morality and honesty of such noblemen and gentlemen's honesty who have sworn off, I shall not presume to offer any animadversion of my own, but content myself in giving the reader the following opinion from Blackstone's Commentaries, vol. i. p. 58. "The laws against smugglers are entirely *juris positivi*: but the criminality of actions can only be measured by their consequences; and he who saves a sum of money by evading the payment of a tax, does equally the same injury to society as he who steals so much from the treasury, and is therefore guilty of as great immorality, or as great an act of dishonesty. Smuggling has been compared to that species of fraud which a man would practise who should join with his friends in ordering a dinner at a tavern, and, after the festivity and gratifications of the day, should steal away and leave his companions to pay his share of the reckoning."

which reign in the female breast,—*gaming, intriguing, and drinking*. The courtly dame of St. James's, the city belle, the St. James's and St. Giles's Cyprian, are equally addicted to them. In general, they are linked thus: they either drink and intrigue, or game and intrigue; for drinking does not suit with those who play for large sums. Some there are, the most perfect of the female sex, in whom all the three cardinal virtues unite, and are equally predominant: there are very few that are not influenced by two, and scarce any without one, of these craving passions,

As your education leads you into various errors, it shall be my endeavour, as far as my abilities will permit me, to guard you against a complication of them, and instruct you how to follow those pursuits with that degree of discretion, modera-

tion, and arrangement, as may best suit your constitutions, purse, or inclinations. There are very few of you that are not fond of gaming; and many of you are great proficient in it. I sincerely wish you would study a few good books, which I shall recommend to you, with as much attention as you have perused that book which contains only fifty-two pages, commonly called a pack of cards. Your morals and minds would then receive considerable improvement. The following works I recommend particularly to your attention—Crumbs of Comfort to a Repentant Sinner; Hooks and Eyes for Believers Breeches; High-heeled Shoes for Dwarfs in Holiness; A Shot aimed at the Devil's Head-quarters, through the Tube of a Cannon of the Covenant; Heaven ravished by a Repentant Sinner; A Heel-piece

to a Limping Sinner ; A Stone cast from the Sling of David ; Little in Stature, but exalted on the Stilts of Faith : Meditations preparatory to the Love-feast at the Tabernacle ; with Gross's Dictionary of the Vulgar Tongue ; Dialogues in the *Slang* Language ; and many other productions of a similar nature, equally honourable to the taste and literature of our country.

Strange as the titles of the above works may appear to you, yet I assure you they do exist, and are both moral, religious, and instructive. Let me request you to purchase them ; they will form a very pretty little library, and adorn your room, as well as improve the mind.

But to proceed :—Many of you have a

very unfair custom : you often play cards for large sums of money, when you have not a shilling in your pocket. I really find myself compelled to condemn this practice : yet you are not so much to be blamed, having examples set you every day by men and women of the first fashion ; the latter of whom are not satisfied with the advantage of not being able to lose money, but frequently cheat most abominably into the bargain. I am certain, indeed, that you, ye lovely Cyprians, have too much honesty and too generous a spirit to attempt it : indeed you may avoid all this disgrace, and yet indulge your favourite passion of gaming, in the following manner. There are few of you who have not a great number of pawn-brokers card-tickets ; with these you may play at commerce, Pope Joan, Cribbage, and Loo ; or, if you wish to play a very deep game, you may



form them into a pack, and by that means speedily either win all your adversary's pledges, or get rid of your own.

Having instructed you how to indulge the passion of gaming, I shall proceed to give you what information I am able on the other two cardinal virtues. First, to intrigue ; but by my modesty I swear I am confoundedly puzzled, and find myself rather at a loss how to instruct you in this important science. Therefore the best method you can adopt is to copy the women of fashion : they are most perfect mistresses of this art ; and some even are so expert as to deceive the most suspicious and jealous husbands ; who, although they are absolutely qualified to butt with the stoutest ram of their flocks, think their wives as chaste as Diana, and speak of them to all their friends as the Lucretias of the age.

You, ye lovely Cyprians, (I address myself to those of the first class,) are too unguarded in your conduct. I do not in any other respect condemn you, or charge you with excess, as from my heart I believe you are as moderate in your amours as the women of fashion. No comparison, however, can be fairly drawn between you and them; for intrigue is not only your province, but your trade: you cannot live without it; they may: I, therefore, say you are by far the less to be blamed; and certainly the balance in favour of modesty and virtue is on your side. In one sense, indeed, there is a very strong resemblance between you and them; for there is no great difference whether a woman receives money to intrigue, or intrigues with a man to whom she has lost a sum of money too large for her finances to pay; and it is well known

that many modest women have liquidated their debts of honour by an honourable surrender of their persons.

What female heart can gold withstand?

What cat's averse to fish?

In the following case there is no comparison whatever to be made between you and them. You often receive large sums of money to intrigue with men for whom you have not the smallest predilection. Modest women often, to pay a debt of honour lost at cards, have honourably surrendered their persons to men equally disagreeable to them. You are tempted to the deed, to defray your necessary expences : they have no excuse whatever : it is not even to gratify their sensual passions that they make a surrender of their persons, but only to indulge that cursed vice—gaming.

In one particular respect they have a much greater claim to our praise and gratitude than you : but then we should be very ungrateful indeed if we did not allow you a sufficient share equivalent to your kindness ; when any of you make us objects of real affection. The favour the woman of fashion grants is not to be esteemed in the smallest degree more valuable than that which you grant : the difference only is in the consequences, if discovered, which to some lovers enhance the value of the sacrifice. If found out, they are not only forsaken by their friends and relations, but deserted, condemned, and scandalized by their old associates and acquaintance, one half of whom are as culpable as themselves, though, perhaps, the first to censure, and the most severe in their condemnation ; for there are too many of them, who, in public, will

strain at a gnat, in private will swallow a camel. I once knew a lady so scrupulously decorous in her conduct in public, that she would never give her hand to any one but her partner in dancing, but presented her elbow, who afterwards was unfortunately caught in familiar conversation with a lamplighter, one dark evening, in the house passage. Remember, I beseech you, that no blot is a blot until it is hit;—then be, ye fair, with caution bold !

One would be inclined to imagine, that the heavy penalties in Westminster-hall, for playing at hunt-the-slipper with a tailor's wife, and various other actual cases of crim. con. for which the legislature has severely punished the offenders, would deter others from attempting the conjugal bed. But in truth, men who



live in the politer circles of haut ton cannot avoid it: he must either quit his friends, and retire from the gayer circles of life, or submit to the ruling fashion of the day: when at Rome, a man must do as they do at Rome, or nobody will associate with him. In some families, if a man is invited to dinner, and he does not say handsome things to the mistress of the house, she will hardly give him sauce to his meat. This contraband trade I ever have condemned. It is so gross an encroachment on the fair trader, that, did I possess any influence with the Minister, or the Chief Justice of the King's Bench, I would procure a law to be enacted for the purpose of inflicting the severest penalties on this species of smuggling.

Now, ye lovely and fair sex in gene-

ral, let us proceed to the use of the third and last cardinal virtue, though not the least in your esteem or mine ; I mean that of drinking. Of the three cardinal virtues that I wish the fair sex in general to understand better than they now do, and to practise with more advantage and satisfaction, drinking is by far the most to be commended for many reasons, but particularly for that which I am going to mention ; for it is said, on the best authority, that it is what passes out of the mouth of a man that defileth him, and not what passeth therein. This the clergy in former days have acknowledged, as appears from that authentic work, Voltaire's History of Charles the Twelfth. “ Un homme digne de foi m' assuré qu'il avoit assisté à une These publique, ou il s'agissoit de savoir, si l'usage du tabac à fumer etoit permis et

de s'enivrer d'eau-de-vie, mais non de fumer, parce que la très sainte ecriture dit que cè qui sort de la bouche de l'homme le souille, et que ce qui y entre ne la souille point."

The two other cardinal virtues may be deemed sinful by certain rigid zealots, but this cannot. Your habits in this particular, ye lovely Cyprians, are already so perfect that it is unnecessary for me to recommend it to you; for, to do you justice, the generality of you are comfortably devoted to your bottle: nor are the modest women, many of them, far behind you in their devotions to Bacchus; though, it must be acknowledged, this cardinal virtue amongst them is not in such general practice. As for myself, I confess, nothing is so charming, nothing so delightful as a woman in a state of exhilarating

ebriation. You are so sweet, so soft, so charming, and, above all, so tender, when half-seas over ! This delightful passion exhilarates the spirits, dispels the deepest melancholy, and drowns all care : it is, therefore, proper you should be taught how to indulge it in a manner most conducive both to your constitution and your finances. I therefore strongly recommend you to give the preference, beyond all other liquors, to gin ; which is drink fit for a king. Both the king of the gipsies and the king of the beggars, at their royal coronation feasts, and on other festival occasions, treat with no other liquor, and command the use of it to their subjects.

When I was married to the lovely Egyptia of Norwood, I had the honour of drinking many a glass at the wander-

ing monarch's hospitable board. It is even believed by several philosophers of the present age, that the nectar formerly drank by the inhabitants of Olympus was nought but gin.

There are three sovereign reasons why you should give the preference to this admirable fluid. First, you are not forbidden by holy writ to drink it; for, the priests in former ages having avowed that it did not defile the body even to get drunk with brandy, provided it only went in at the mouth, and did not come out of it; gin, being a spirit by far more salubrious, must be more highly sanctioned. Secondly, it is by far the cheapest of all liquors; for humble port now-a-days is at the exorbitant price of three shillings and sixpence a bottle; while, at the christening of little Joey, you may treat



a whole company, and send them merry away, with three shillings and six pennyworth of gin, when with the same expence you can only give them one bottle of wine. Besides, ye lovely Cyprians, in your line of life, it is most salutary and conducive to your health, from its diuretic qualities\*.

Truth has been very properly termed a gem of inestimable value; it is, indeed, the brightest ornament of man and woman. Learn then, ye lovely Cyprians, to place a due value on it; though I already know ye are exemplary economists of that eminent quality. But, great as my tender regards and predilection are for you, I

\* A physician of respectability, in this town, is of opinion, that, were it not for the general use of gin amongst the common women, one half of them would die rotten.

will not sacrifice it on the altar of personal partiality : I will not attribute a virtue solely to the Paphian tribe, which is common to all the fair daughters of Eve ; from those that breath the pure air of St. James's, to those that imbibe the spongy vapours of St. Giles's ; for the courtly belle and the city dame are equally sparing of it as yourselves. As it is your province to make man happy, truth has nothing to do in it ; for, if we take an examination of what is generally understood by happiness, as it has respect either to the understanding or the senses we shall find that all its properties will fall under this short definition : that *it is a perpetual possession of being well deceived*\*. In this, ye lovely fair, you want no instruction, or I would readily give it you : you are perfect mistresses of

\* Dean Swift.

It from your cradle to an age of maturity : in short, you are brought up and educated in that science so well adapted to protect the weakness of your sex.

To his own advantage this education

With relation to the mind or understanding, it is manifest what mighty advantages fiction has over truth ; and the reason is plain, because imagination can build nobler scenes, and produce more wonderful revolutions, than fortune or nature will be at the expence to furnish : nor are you, ye lovely fair, to be blamed for deceit, if we consider that the debate merely lies between things past and things conceived\* ; and so the question is only this, whether things that have place in the *imagination*, may not as properly be said to *exist* as those that are

\* Dean Swift.

seated in the memory, which may be justly held in the affirmative; and very much to the advantage of the former: since this is acknowledged to be the womb of things, and the other allowed to be no more than the *grave*\*. Again, if we take this definition of happiness, and examine it with reference to the senses, it will be acknowledged wonderfully adapted. How fading and insipid do all objects appear to us, that are not conveyed in the vehicle of delusion! How shrunk is every thing as it appears in the glass of nature! So that if it were not for the assistance of artificial *mediums*, false lights, refracted angles, varnish, and tinsel; there would be a mighty level in the felicity and enjoyment of mortal man†. The most perfect happiness which we can enjoy is to be

\* Dean Swift.

† Swift's Works.

well deceived: why then should you deal in truth, when, by substituting deceit, and, if suspected in the least degree, even by swearing to it, which, in due justice, I will allow you are generally very ready to do, you can make your lover happy, who otherwise would be miserable, were he to know one half of your thoughts and actions?—It is humane and charitable in you to keep him in ignorance. Besides, you are sanctioned by Aristotle, who asserts, that a humane lie is preferable to a cruel truth.

The two senses that give you, ye lovely fair, the greatest satisfaction, are the *sight* and the *touch*. Therefore, in a lover never examine further than his countenance, shape, and figure. By no means attempt to examine his brain, for not one man in five hundred possesses any. If



he be but handsome, well-made, and healthy, it is sufficient; for, the greater blockhead and fool he is, the more sure will you be of commanding both his affections and purse. Great characters are seldom worth a strict examination; they are like old china jars, beautiful and admired, by the world in general, for the exquisite workmanship with which they are adorned; but when you look into them, they generally contain dust, dirt, and cobwebs. The two senses, sight and touch, when conjunct, are delightful; but the pleasure of sight alone is imperfect, and is even a torment to the mind, if not accompanied with the delight of touching; of whose pleasures Cicero gives a beautiful idea when he says, "The touch is uniformly spread over the whole body; that we may feel all strokes and appulses of things." This charming description from

that celebrated orator, philosopher, and moralist, you will, ye lovely fair, I am certain, join with me in admiring; for the sight of things can give but little satisfaction if we are denied to feel them.

There is no comparison between the excellence of the two senses: for sight without the touch is nothing; it is not worth the possessing. For instance, how mortifying would any of you find your situation, if you were chained down on one bed, and your lover fastened on another in the same room: though there were twenty candles lighted, you would be in as cruel a situation as Tantalus, immersed to his chin in water and not permitted to drink.

And touching without seeing, although (to repeat the words of the elegant and

moral Cicero) by it we are enabled to feel all strokes and appulses of things, is not completely satisfactory; for, what additional pleasure do we receive from beholding the shape and countenance of a beautiful woman! and ye well know, ye lovely Cyprians, that a lover taken in the dark may, when the light unfolds him to you, be so hideous as to frighten you into fits. For the above reasons, I recommend it to you never to sleep without candles in your room, to keep all ghosts away, who are very disagreeable visitors, and particularly fond of disturbing lovers. There is no instance of one ever having been seen by day; and be assured they never make their appearance at night where there is a light, for they are in as much dread of a candle as the devil is of holy water, of which if half a pint only were to be forced down

his throat, it would be sure to kill him : for, once on a time, he by chance tasted a very small quantity, which operated most violently on him, both as an emetic and cathartic, sudorific and diuretic\*, that it was with great difficulty his life was preserved. Ever since this violent attack, his olfactory organs are so much improved that he can smell a *font* ten miles off, and cautiously avoids going near one, for fear only of being splashed by some ill-natured priest, as it would infallibly raise blisters on his skin.

You have already been admonished by me, in the choice of a lover, never to look for any other accomplishment, or to wish for any perfection in him,

\* See the Bishop of Bergen's Treatise, so well known among metaphysical writers, *De natura diaboli, et infernorum spirituum officiis, &c.*

except a handsome face, an elegant shape, and manly appearance : the more ignorant and stupid you find him, the better for you.

I trust you will pay the greater attention to my advice, when I inform you that my opinion of a suitable friend to your conveniences, wants, and pleasures, is drawn from the works of the memorable and learned Plutarch, who informs us, that the best musical instruments are made from the *bones of asses*. Therefore you must agree with me, that the more stupid ass you have to deal with, with greater ease and facility will you be able to play upon him, and use him as an instrument for your wants and pleasures. In the choice of a lover you should be attentive in particular to his features, as they are a great ornament to the *outward*



man, and a type of grace in the inward. For it is held by naturalists, that if there be a protuberancy of parts in the superior region of the body, as in the ears or nose, there must be a parity also in the inferior. This evidently accounts for the predilection which some women have had for long noses. The devout sisters in the monasteries look upon all extraordinary dilations, as protrusions of *zeal*, or spiritual excrescences, and honour them with superior *homage* and devotion.

Although the countenance, shape, and manly appearance of a lover are the three chief points you should look to in your choice of one, yet I wish you to pay some degree of attention to another good quality that may be of infinite benefit to you, provided you are fortunate enough to meet with a man who possesses it, I mean—ho-

nour. Let me, therefore, recommend you to form no connection but with a nobleman. In him you are sure to meet with it ; for, in all great families, *honour*, like the *gout*, is *hereditary*. In former days this would have restricted your amours ; but now you need not despair of finding one, for within these few years so many large batches of peers have been made, that every fourth coach passing the streets of London is graced with a coronet, and peers are as plenty as postilions. Indeed, I will not take upon me to say what diminution of coronets the armorial bearing-tax will produce on carriages ; for the nobility are not fonder of contributing to the exigency of the State than the middling order or common people, of which we have had evident proofs by so many of them swearing off last year, to lessen the payment of the income tax.

In conversation you should ever try to introduce the phrases and expressions of great characters. Attend to the few following; they are the best I can at present recollect: and you may, with a very little attention, learn them by heart; and your good sense will instruct you when to apply them properly.

When you are in love with a man, and wish to express your gratitude and affection, you may say, *When I forsake him, may God forsake me!*

When an impertinent tradesman duns you, and complains how very flat his and all other trades are; tell him that your trade also is not so good as it was, from the encroachments made on your privileges by the modest women. Then boldly declare, that, whether his trade,

or any other, is on the decline, it is nothing to you—*Perish commerce, so that your constitution lives !*

When rather deranged in your circumstances, mention the *pressure of your affairs* : when on business with your attorney, tell him your affairs are so deranged that they require *a vigour beyond the law* ; tell him you have a high opinion of his judgment, although he is only *a chicken of the law* : and when any person relates to you a strange out-of-the-way story, tell him that *you should be looked upon as a goose* if you credited his assertions.

When you speak of and wish to describe the person and accomplishments of a handsome well-made man, say, *you saw him in the horizon ; and surely a*

*brighter vision never lit on this earth, for he scarcely seemed to touch it : and do not forget, when you speak of the common people, always to call them the swinish multitude.*

If your lover will not run any man through the body for inadvertently treading on your gown in Kensington Gardens, tell him that *the age of chivalry is gone, and that of sophisters, economists, and calculators has succeeded ; and the glory of your country is extinguished for ever ! and little did you dream that you should live to see such disasters fall upon you, in a nation of gallant men, in a nation of men of honour and of cavaliers ; that you thought ten thousand swords would have leaped from their scabbards to avenge even a look that threatened you with insult.*



When you speak of the cruelty and excesses committed in war, do not forget to say, that, to compel women to discover where their money and jewels were hid, *they applied red-hot irons to the source of nature* \* : but be sure you can prove such a horrid assertion, or you deserve to have your tongue cut out.

You will often find it very convenient, when you are pressed to answer some perplexing question, to tell them to ask your grandmother's muff. When you want to get money from a vain, miserly, ugly fellow, you should always praise his beauty ; and be sure not to accept any present from him at the first interview. Tell him, the favours you granted were most voluntarily conferred ; and that the

\* Vide Burke's speech on Warren Hastings's trial.

charms of his person were too captivating not to attract the admiration of any woman of real taste and judgment. A handsome man does not want to be told of his beauty; he knows that he is well-looking: but if he has a defect, of which he is conscious, be sure to conceal your knowledge of it from him. Some women of my acquaintance have got considerable presents, only by taking my advice, from the ugliest fellows that nature ever formed, (but then I knew his weak side, and told them how to tickle his fancy,) who would not have given them five pounds in five months if they had gone the common way to work. And do you know that one stupid fellow has been told so often of his beauty, that he positively believes himself a very handsome well-looking man; and so vain is he now, that he can never keep his eyes

out of a looking-glass, although I would not permit my favourite mistress, if she was with child, to look at him.

Lord Chesterfield says, somewhere in his Works, that it is not possible to flatter a woman too much : if ever so gross, she will believe it. But I do not mind what he says; for he was not half so well acquainted with these matters as myself. It is a scandalous libel on your understanding, and proceeds from not having a true knowledge of your unaffected simplicity and unconscious charms. Yet, I confess, by praising the teeth, which were remarkably good, of an ugly woman, I have made her study an hundred forms with her mouth to shew them in company, and grin as if she had been performing through a horse-collar for the Cheshire cheese : and many ugly women,

who really had handsome legs, I have, by praising them, been the occasion of their wearing their petticoats at least four inches shorter ; but then they were very weak women. A real female philosopher, or one of the blue-stockings club ladies, would not have been guilty of such folly. They are not to be amused with such futile unsatisfactory accomplishment. You must talk to them of the centre of attraction and gravity ; of raising perpendiculars, and of dividing the circle ; of Aristotle, Ovid, Catullus, Tibullus, and the more modern authors, who have written concerning and touching the rights claimed and performed by women.

The French language is a very great accomplishment ; and I recommend it to your particular attention : but I guard

you against using French phrases until you perfectly understand it. Neither is it prudent to speak it until you are perfect mistress of it ; for you will be subject to as much ridicule in company if you misapply any phrase, or commit errors, as those who have spoken Greek in either house of parliament, without understanding it. I recommend to your attention particularly, that you discriminate well between the masculine and feminine genders ; as *mon* and *ma*, in various words, totally alter the sense of them : also in words that sound alike, take care you are not led into an error : and as we are not so polite a nation as the French, and have not that happy turn in our language as theirs admit of, you may meet with some gross and indecent reply, that would make you blush for a week to come.



Strange errors and ridiculous expressions have been made use of very innocently, and particularly by servants, not understanding the French language; of which I will give you a very ludicrous instance.

The Duke and Duchess of —, some few years before the Revolution, were at Paris; and one of the princes of the blood made a present to the duchess, of a most beautiful foreign horse, perfectly docile, and well broke for her own riding. On their return to England, a coachman, a faithful and old servant in the family, was pitched upon as the properest person to be entrusted with this favourite horse, to bring him to England; the coachman having brought a set of English horses over to Paris with great success, although he could not speak a word

of the French language. The duke and duchess accordingly set off from Paris, leaving the horse to the care of their faithful coachman : and, in about a week after their arrival in London, one evening her grace having a private party to cards, the groom of the chambers announced the arrival of the coachman and her horse ; when her grace requested the company would permit her to speak a moment to the coachman in their presence, and he was immediately ordered up stairs into the drawing-room. Well, coachman, said her grace, how is my horse after his journey ? Please your grace, he is in very good health and spirits ; he travelled well and fed heartily. I am very glad to hear it.—But, pray, coachman, how did you come through the country ? did you find no difficulty in your journey ? To be sure, an't please your grace, I was put to some

trouble and difficulty now and then ; but what with bougering one, and foutering another, I came on tolerably well.

That of kissing the Pope's toe, is certainly a most absurd ceremony, as well as the most humiliating. To be sure, if any part of a man is to be kissed by man, it is but of little consequence whether it be the toe, the hand, or parts behind, as long as the party so respected, and to whom that homage is due, be but well bred, and decorous : for, to be saluted by a fillip on the nose, or by posterior vociferations, would be fully as disagreeable to the olfactory and auricular organs, as a kick on the chops to the organ of speech. The whole is a very indelicate custom with men : but with women it is quite different ; for no attention or kindness whatever, or wherever, which is paid them,

can degrade or humiliate the man who is so happily employed.

Embracing amongst friends is much the custom abroad, and is considered a common act of civility. It is indeed practised in this country, though not so frequent. In performing these ceremonies, we should be particularly attentive and not let our thoughts ramble on other things, with which our minds are deeply impressed; lest we should be guilty of some strange eccentricity, which may not be conceived or understood, and to a due consideration of which I shall refer my readers to a future part of my work.

So great is my regard for your interest and welfare, ye lovely Cyprians, that I cannot without much concern reflect on the

encroachments which the modest women daily make on your privileges. Not a term passes without some new instance occurring in Westminster Hall, of crim. con. which is an unwarrantable intrusion on your profession ; and if this traffic increases, crim. con. will soon be as general and familiar to us as nem. con. For, in those days, the modest women, as the Scripture sayeth, come skipping over mountains of sin ; and the men, instead of being votaries at your shrine, are become like unto horses, every one neighing after his neighbour's wife.

History informs us, that when Julius Cæsar invaded Britain, the Britons had their wives in common, and that they were not only the bravest, but happiest of mankind. I cannot, therefore, see any reason why married men, who are real



patriots, should lament the infidelity of their wives ; as, by such a disposition, our common country may derive an increase both of happiness and valour. Indeed, cuckolds in general are the very best of men ; and the disgrace is merely ideal, if you will only for a moment reflect, that the greatest heroes, statesmen, and divines, ancient as well as modern, have had their brows decorated with antlers. History informs us, that the foreheads of Cæsar and of Pompey were not adorned with laurels only ; nor is that of the conqueror of Italy, the modern Alexander, without those insignia which put one in mind of a Lord Mayor. Indeed, if the criterion of our country's happiness depends on the endeavours of our modest women, we have just reason to suppose that we are approaching as fast as possible to the perfection of it. In my

younger days, when I made my debut in the great world, it was absolutely necessary for every young man to be à *cavaglier* 'servente to some lady of fashion, and to pay her every respect and attention, in order to procure admission into good company; for there was no such thing as gaming in those days at the fashionable assemblies: now, any person, it matters not who or what he is if he has but a few guineas to throw away at their gaming tables, is a welcome guest\*.

All who know me, (and who is there among the polite, fashionable, and learned

\* Amongst the sights, equally novel and scandalous, which the depraved manners of those who call themselves the fashionable world have introduced, and which must strike the mind of every well-bred foreigner with disgust and astonishment, is the odious appearance of Bow-street runners at fashionable routs

world who do not know me?) will do me the justice to acknowledge, that I ever have possessed a strong predilection in favour of you, ye lovely Cyprians; and since a certain gentleman was fined 13,000*l.* for innocently playing at Hunt the Slipper with the wife of a tailor, which the jury

and galas. Although no man admires the professional abilities of my old acquaintance Townsend more than I do, (for who is such an adept in the art of *frisking a ken, trapping a scamp, or hobbling a nuckler?*) yet, when I form to myself an idea of the pure and grave morals and manners of our mothers and grandmothers, I cannot help feeling most sensibly for that extraordinary and rapid decay of every principle that dignified and adorned society in their time; the dereliction of which must necessarily expose us in the eyes of Europe, where, with all their vices, the assemblies of the higher orders are not disgraced by the superintendence of police-officers, who are only qualified to be masters of the ceremonies at routs and balls in those polite parts of the town, Saltpetre Bank, Petticoat-lane, Tothilfields, and St. Giles's.

construed into a criminal conversation, I should think it madness to attempt the thing; for, by Heavens, not all the tailors' wives in London possess temptation enough for me to risk the loss of one-fifth part of the sum !

I am so frightened, I assure you, at being alone in a room with a married woman, that, a very few months ago, a lady of above sixty years old called on me relative to the purchasing of an ensigncy for a relation : when she came into the room, I politely apologised to her for opening the window-shutter, which had been shut to prevent the sun from putting the fire out, by saying ; that, ever since Peeping Tom, the Mary-le-bone tailor, had given his evidence about a window-shutter being closed when a lady came into the room of a house opposite

to him, I did not think it prudent to sit with mine shut : so I seated her by the fire, and placed myself in the window, that the opposite neighbours, if they were inclined to take a peep, might view my conduct.

Some half-witted philosophers have asserted, that the passions of women are usually as much weaker than the passions of men, as their bodily strength is weaker than the strength of men. This is a gross error. Indeed we read in ancient history, that Hercules actually deflowered fifty virgins in one night : but such a fabulous account is to be considered as a mere display of poetical figure ; or at least we may say, that, with respect to such feats, the days of chivalry are past. Your passions, ye lovely fair, in general



are naturally violent ; but we are more particularly indebted, for the propriety of your conduct, to the virtuous novels and romances which are put into your hands the moment you can read : it is from such studies that you learn and acquire the firmness, fortitude, and self-forbearance which you never fail to evince in curbing your passions, which otherwise would ultimately overwhelm you in guilt and ruin. No law in the statute-books could keep you in any degree of moderation, or limit your conduct within the bounds of decency and decorum ; if it were not for the philosophy, wisdom, and religion that is disseminated by those most useful and admirable establishments, the circulating libraries. It is the virtue and morality instilled so early into your minds by the study of their invaluable productions, that will ever suppress

the wanton breezes that so often disturb the tranquillity of hearts. By them, early in life, you are taught to admire love, which is the noblest passion in the human breast ;—then succeed jealousy, intrigue, economy of truth, revenge, poison, and elopements. When resolved on the latter, I charge you never to effect it but out of a window at least one story high. When you fly to Gretna Green, or any other green or rural retirement, with your lover, never pass out at the door, although you have the key in your pocket, and all the servants in the house in your pay. There is no prowess, no enterprize, no danger, no eclat at all in such an elopement. Oh, no ! out of the window you must go. It will impress your lover with a respect for your heroism, and ever establish you, in his opinion, as a woman of true spirit, courage, and spunk : who will do any

thing, go any where, and proceed to any lengths, for the man she loves.

Ye charming Cyprians, there is a rock as dangerous to you as the rocks of Scilly are to the mariner, on which many of you founder. I shall place a beacon of mercy on it, to warn you against those calamities which numbers of your sisterhood have suffered. Many of you, who have acquired a competent independence by years of industry, have been induced to give ear to the solicitations of matrimony from some low fellow, merely from an anxious desire of being made what the world vulgarly calls *an honest woman*. Are you not sufficiently honest, as long as you act by others as you wish them to act by you ;—are grateful and kind to your friends ; defraud no one ; and are guilty of no treachery or baseness ;—and are in-

stigated in all your actions by nought but friendship, love, gratitude, and honour? Do you think, if you cannot reserve your charms for one man by a fixed determination of the mind, that a ring has such magic powers to ensure either your continency or a man's fidelity? And with respect to being made an honest woman, are you not to the full as honest as a *modest* woman who makes a beast of her husband; holds him out to the ridicule of the world; and who, with her milliner, her bijoux merchant, and at the gaming-table, squanders, in useless trifles and profligacy, as much in two winters as would be a moderate fortune for two of her children? These fellows, when you are married to them, immediately consider themselves as independent gentlemen; forsake their occupations, live in idleness, and indulge in every fashionable vice. Drinking,

gaming, and horse-racing, are their chief amusements ; so that they very soon run through your fortune ; when they enlist, go to sea, or fly the country, leaving you in beggary and misery. Many women have been in this manner ruined and reduced to the most abject poverty from a life of independence. One in particular, with whom I was intimately acquainted before I went to America, had an independence of four hundred a-year regularly paid her, an elegant house completely furnished, and did not owe a guinea. She married a fellow of this description, who shortly spent all her fortune. Seven years afterwards, on my return to England, she wrote to me, and I found her in a miserable garret near Soho-square, hired at half-a-crown a-week. She had pawned and sold every thing of value to support her, except one



gown ; and declared that for a considerable time she had not known the taste of meat, but had subsisted chiefly on tea and bread, and now and then a pennyworth of sprats.

My next attempt, ye lovely Cyprians, shall be to instruct you how to command sympathy and compassion when very dejected, melancholy, and in terrible low spirits, brought on from the want of cash, and having held your hand up too frequently to your heads. Many of you, I make no doubt, have read the description given in the Rolliad and Probationary Odes, of Mrs. Geo. Anne Bellamy ; how she was accustomed, when out of cash, to sit with her legs astride the ballustrades of Westminster-bridge. One particular day, having parted with her diamond wind-mill, sitting as she was wont to do, when out of cash, on the bridge, with her

favourite lap-dog under her arm, meditating on plunging into eternity, an old admirer of her, a gallant baronet, Sir C—— W——, at this moment passing by, and fortunately observing her, took hold, *as she says*, of her dog by the tail, and gently drew her back, fainting, into his arms. You, ye generous Cyprians, will agree with me, that whether he laid hold of her dog by the tail or not, it was equally gallant and humane, so that he was but the cause of saving her invaluable life. Recovering from her swoon, she found herself in a clean hackney-coach, drawn by two beautiful white horses, in her gallant C——'s arms; but could not find her diamond-pin, which was of some value, though she by no means taxes the baronet with the smallest suspicion of having taken it. However, some charming poetry in a few days passed between them, which, for its sentiment and ele-

gance, I shall present to you. The baronet wrote her the following:—

Whilst you, dear Anne, on Styx prepar'd to sail,  
Lo, one dog sav'd you by another's tail!

To which Mrs. Geo. Anne Bellamy, with her usual wit and abilities, replied—

You pinch'd my dog, 'tis true, and spoil'd my sail;  
But then, my PIN, oh! there you squeez'd my tail.

For Heaven's sake, ye lovely Cyprians, however out of spirits or out of cash you may be, let me entreat you never to follow her example in her accustomed airing. I will teach you how to command pity and attract more notice, when in any accidental state of inconvenience, by a much more easy and safe method, and which will by no means expose your lives to such imminent danger. If you

have a balcony before your house, you may place yourself in a chair in a lounging posture, with one leg hung over the railing. If your house has no balcony, a one-pair-of-stairs window will do equally as well: you may sit in a lounging, desponding posture, with one leg in and the other out, in a *degagé* style. I am certain a man must have a heart of stone who would not stop, on viewing a beautiful leg elegantly disposed out of a window, and make the most anxious inquiries after the wants, wishes, and peculiar circumstances of the fair owner of it. I judge at least by my own feelings; for certainly, impressed by the curious despondency of your attitude, I should be desirous of administering all the comfort that I could produce.

Ye lovely Cyprians, I shall not trouble

you much with politics. As all of you take in the news, you may, if you please, be as well acquainted with public as you are with domestic affairs : it will undoubtedly be your own fault if you are not.

I must now call your attention, ye lovely Cyprians, to the Works of the celebrated and moral Godwin. This philosopher has extended his morality, his virtue, and his tender regard and affections to a very great length. His abhorrence of all sin, immorality, and the carnal lusts of the flesh, is so great, that he has even exposed to the world the frailties of the wife of his bosom, which she, in the tenderest moments of confidence, imparted to him ; as all generous and open-hearted women are disposed to do to a man on whom they have fixed their affections. I should imagine that it must



have been at her own desire that such things should be made known, although the moral and affectionate husband did not publish her observations until after her death. It may indeed appear, at first, very extraordinary to you, that a man of honour or feeling should expose the foibles and vices of a woman, communicated to him in a state of sacred confidence ; and, particularly, that he should choose *his own wife* as a subject of exposure : but, by reading the following passages from that philosopher's works \*, you will easily unravel the mystery, and see that sincerity and the *love of innocence* were the author's motives.

“ The powerful recommendations attendant upon sincerity are obvious ; it is

\* Godwin, p. 329. vol. i.

intimately connected with the general dissemination of innocence, energy, intellectual improvement, and philanthropy."

I think this sentence would have been more moral and energetic, if the philosopher had, in addition to philanthropy, added *affection for woman*. Again; he continues \*—"We have only to suppose men obliged to consider, before they determined upon an equivocal action, whether they chose to be their own historians, the future narrators of a scene in which they were acting a part; and the most ordinary imagination will instantly suggest how essential a variation would be introduced into human affairs. It has been justly observed, that the Popish practice of auricular confession is attended with some salutary effects. How much

\* Page 322.

better would it be, if, instead of an institution thus equivocal, and which has been so dangerous an instrument of ecclesiastical despotism, every man were to make the *world his confessional*, and the human species the keeper of his conscience? There is a further benefit that would result to me from the habit of telling every man the truth, regardless of the dictates of worldly prudence and custom: I should acquire a *clear, ingenuous, and unbiassed air.*"

How little am I acquainted with true honour, innocence, virtue, and sincerity! Indeed I should for ever have remained in darkness, if the character of this philosopher had not induced me to read his Works. I have been taught, from my early youth, to believe that no happiness on earth was equal to the enjoyment of

a woman's confidence, who, in the hour of tender affection, unbosoms her soul to the man in whom she reposes every faith; who not only makes him acquainted with those trivial foibles and errors into which she has been led by the weakness of her sex, but does not even scruple to avow the whole catalogue of her misconduct. I have also held it as sacred as my creed, that it was an excess of infamy either to betray or expose favours granted or confidence reposed: but how have I erred, according to this philosopher's tenets; sinful and unsincere have I been; for, so help me God, I never yet have betrayed a woman, nor ever intentionally injured one of the sex, nor ever exposed their weakness or hurt their feelings. Are we not satisfied with the possession of their charms and their confidence, but must we also betray and expose them? Cursed be such

*sincerity*, such *frankness*, such *unembarrassed air*, such *innocence*, such *worldly confession* \*. I am resolved, however, to continue in my past unphilosophic, unmetaphysic error, and avow my want of innocence, sincerity, and worldly confession ; for never will I betray or expose the lovely, weaker part of human nature, to whom it is our duty to render every assistance, as well as to bewail their misfortunes, and sympathize in their errors. A brave man can never betray a woman's confidence ; it is an act only of a coward and atheistical philosopher. Such worldly sincerity and confession can only spring from a cold metaphysic heart, incapable of being warmed by the tender passion of love, and who is dead to that happiness which woman alone

\* Vide Godwin's words, p. 329, 330. vol. i.



can bestow. There are many passages in his Works which you, ye lovely fair, who are unacquainted with metaphysics, will not understand; nor indeed do many others: pass them over, dwell and judge of them as they in general are judged of by people who do not understand them; who, from their being unintelligible, pronounce them sensible, learned, virtuous, moral, and excellent productions.

One grand principle in his Works you certainly can verify; for he teaches us to believe, that no act of benevolence or friendship is ever done, without a view or expectancy of a return; for you, ye lovely Cyprians, to your sorrow, can testify, that few men render you favours but with the hope of an equivalent return.

Speaking of the succession of ideas, this learned philosopher gives us farther information, in these words: "My mind wanders to the different parts of my body, and receives a sensation from the chair upon which I sit, and from the table on which I lean." If the mind can receive sensation from a chair or table, certainly it must be operated on also by the bed you lay on; therefore, you should be particularly attentive to the construction of them. Feather beds uppermost, and next to the human body, are deemed very prejudicial to health, and generally exploded for mattresses. The celebrated Doctor Graham, in his printed lectures, recommends, that mattresses should be made from the hair of horses tails, they being of a more elastic quality than any other hair. You, ye lovely Cyprians, should be particularly attentive to this

celebrated doctor's instruction: for, although your mind may have sufficient *volition* to be active, which it is desirous of communicating to the body; yet, from a defect in the co-acting elastic powers, the *volition* to activity both of mind and body may be impeded; for, as this author assures us that the mind does receive sensation from an inanimate chair or table, it certainly is more likely to receive sensation from an elastic hair mattress, made from the hair of horses tails.

Speaking of the *phenomenon of walking*\*, he says: "Walking is in all cases originally a voluntary motion; in a child, when he learns to walk; in a rope-dancer, when he begins to practise that particular exercise." I must confess, that I do not

\* Vide page 418.

perfectly understand the learned author in this point ; for, many rope-dancers, in attempting to learn the profession, have involuntarily broken their necks ; and to use the philosopher's own favourite expression, notwithstanding the very great degree of *volition* he may have to live, that *volition* of living does not prevent a man from breaking his neck. You, ye lovely Cyprians, who have made so many false steps, by which you have been ruined, though you have not absolutely broken your necks, may, perhaps, be more capable of elucidating this paradox, than the learned author, or his friend, who have both written much concerning *volition*, and assure us that no man can die unless he has lost his *volition* to live.

Being naturally of a gay disposition, and blessed with an excellent constitu-

tion and good spirits, I have often been much vexed, on perusing my own works, to find them so very dull and insipid, after having tried as far as lay in my power to make them lively. I now have discovered the cause: it is from no natural defect, or want of gaiety, but it has proceeded from having always sat on a hard wooden chair whilst I was writing them, for Mr. Godwin informs us in the following words: "My mind wanders to the different parts of my body, and receives a sensation from the chair upon which I sit." This philosopher, for ought I know, being quite different from other men, may sit on his head; but I sit on those parts that the rest of mankind sit on; and as we are assured that the mind receives sensation *a posteriori*, when I write my *next* work, I shall be particularly attentive to the construction of the chair in which I sit,



and will employ that ingenious mechanic, Mr. Weeks, to make one of the following materials; the works of Swift, Fielding, Tom Browne, Rabelais, Sterne, &c.

As the mind receives sensation *a posteriori*, from the chair we sit on, it is impossible but my mind must receive sensation from books replete with such a store of wit; and my future works will consequently be more gay, lively, and amusing. This enigmatical philosopher, Godwin, though he has studied to please the reader of his work, has never studied how to please you; for if man, as he says, were a passive being, and not active, he certainly would not be so agreeable to you; as motion is positively necessary to produce pleasure: for instance, if any part of the body were affected with that irritation vulgarly called itching, and

you were to apply a finger to the irritated part, what pleasure would that afford, unless you possessed the volition of rubbing it : you must therefore allow, that friction is absolutely necessary to allay the itching ; and that it must proceed from action. His Majesty King James the First felt the force of this argument so strongly, as to declare, that scratching was too great a pleasure for a subject to enjoy. Mr. Godwin in one respect is right, and with grief and shame we must acknowledge, that there are men, if men they may be called, who are actually passive ; but such are of a description too detestable and depraved to be recorded in a work like this ; whose object is to reform reformable vices, and to restore those principles of morality and religion which heretofore characterized our forefathers.

From the numerous visits I have paid at your doors, I have been, ye lovely Cyprians, often inclined to think that most of you have read this philosopher's works ; or at least that your servant-maids have, and have most particularly attended to chap. the vi. book the iv. vol. the first, intituled, " Of the mode of excluding visitors." The learned, pious, and virtuous author, is so scrupulously attentive to truth, as to deem it perfectly immoral for a servant to deny his master, when at home, to any visitor, let him be ever so troublesome ; and says, " whatever sophistry we may employ to excuse our proceedings, certain it is that the servant understands the lesson we teach him to be a lie. It is accompanied with all the retinue of falsehood, and before it can be skilfully practised, he must be no mean proficient in hypocrisy.

“ When he has learned this degenerate lesson in one instance, who will undertake that it shall produce no unfavourable effects upon his general conduct ?”

I wish, from my soul, that great men, in public employments of the state, would attend to this philosopher’s precepts, and take a leaf out of his book. They never are at home, and must be the most idle and indolent of the human race ; being ever abroad, attending to their own private amusement, and not to the affairs of state ; or their servants are, all of them, most abominable and wicked liars.

You, ye lovely Cyprians, widely differ in sincerity from all great men, and attend most diligently to *your* business ; for, when at home, you never are denied to a visitor. Great praise is due to this

philosopher, for having in one instance improved you in morality and virtue, and for having preserved the character of your confidential Abigail from being *contaminated with a Plebeian lie*\*.

For Molly, kind and sympathising, never denies her mistress, though at that moment it is not convenient for her to be seen; but, like a virtuous and sincere Godwinnite, tells you, "My mistress is at present engaged, Sir; but if you will be so good as to call again in an hour's time, I have no doubt but she will be visible."

"You think, then, by that time, Molly, that she will be at leisure?" "Oh, yes, Sir, for certain: be so kind as to call again, Sir; pray do." I must confess, I have been much gratified in contemplating the native purity, simplicity, and un-

\* Vide Godwin's own words, vol. i. page 360.



polluted truth of such a petticoated Godwinnite; and at the same time have been struck with a remorse of conscience, on being so great a hypocrite myself, and making my servants such infamous liars: for they often have orders to deny me, when I am really engaged on business, to every soul living, except to a bailiff; and those gentlemen I order positively, at all times, if ever so unseasonable, to be admitted: it is by far more politic to see them, as you may perhaps prevail on them to call again at a more convenient time, or send for some friend to bail you. If you deny yourself, he is certain to wait in the street for you, and catch you up when engaged with people of fashion; and many gentlemen would feel a considerable degree of mortification, from being the cause of introducing such a character into such com-

pany. As for myself, I confess I have not for some years been troubled by this ridiculous *mauvaise honte*. Such an unwelcome visitor may considerably derange the nervous system of some young men who are not on such familiar footing with them. But practice makes perfect.

---

*The History of the Lovely Ægyptia  
of Norwood:—a true and affecting  
Love-tale.*

THAT the Gipsies are a very wise and learned race, you, ye lovely Cyprians, I trust, as well as myself, will acknowledge. My regard for you would not be sufficiently manifested, were I not, as far

as lay in my power, to attend to your health and constitutions, as well as to your worldly interest and mental improvements. As some of you, more kind and liberal in the distribution of favours than your sex in general, have generously let me partake and share your sufferings and miseries, as well as your pleasures and happiness, I should be truly ungrateful if I did not impart to you a most valuable secret, by which those maladies, that often bid defiance to all Æsculapian powers, are cured by a single touch. This invaluable charm I was taught by one of the Ægyptian tribe, from whom I formerly acquired much knowledge and science; through my attachment and regard for a beautiful young female wanderer, who made so liberal a return for my affections, as not only to permit me to possess her confidence and choicest secrets,

but to obtain for me the respect of her whole tribe.

Before I disclose this valuable secret to you, I must relate the miseries I suffered from my attachment to this charming vagrant, from her cruel infidelity. If the heart of this beautiful angel had been as fair as her countenance, we should have continued till this day, I make no doubt, mutually enjoying the delights of love. She had an enchanting voice, a pretty taste for music, and played charmingly on the dulcimer. By the light of the moon how have her strains enchanted me!—strictly in time, and never out of tune. Amongst various other songs, she often used to sing, with a considerable degree of sentiment and expression, the following beautiful elegy on the accomplishments and trade of a tinker :

Tom Tinker's my true love,  
 And I am his dear ;  
 And all the world over  
 His budget I'll bear,

I cannot recollect the rest. I used to listen with raptures to the melody of her voice whilst singing this charming air, and was far too infatuated to suspect her cruel deceit; for I thought her the Pamela of Norwood, the paragon of her race, the Hester of the eighteenth century, until, on my return, after a short absence, to the rural abode of her tender and affectionate parents, they informed me that she was gone off with a travelling tinker of a neighbouring tribe, who wandered about the country mending pots and kettles. Sighing my sorrows to the woods and fields, how did I curse the falsehood of the sex! for what happiness or constancy could I expect from the higher



orders, perfected by education, when a nymph, a stranger both to courts and cities—born in the lap of earth—educated and bred up in rural retirement as a child of nature, could thus forsake and abandon to misery such an affectionate lover and husband? The generous parents, feeling for my distress, endeavoured, to the utmost of their power, to alleviate my sorrows for the inconstancy of their child, my wife; the charming *Ægyptia* having been betrothed to me: for these wise and enlightened wanderers have no marriage rites performed by a priest, any more than our forefathers of old, who thought it sufficient to obey the command of God—Increase and multiply. I had both her consent, and that of her parents: I took her, and led her to my tent rejoicing. For early in life did I learn, both from Scripture and the

learned Madan, to follow the will of the Creator, in preference to the arrogated and unsanctioned ceremonies of priests. They endeavoured to atone to me for the inconstancy of their child, by instructing me in all the arts and mysteries for which their nation is so celebrated.

The father was a perfect magician; so wonderfully skillful as to possess a power of transforming sheep and calves into wearing apparel and linen; pigs and chickens into shoes and stockings; cocks and hens into breeches and petticoats; and all sorts of game and venison into rum, gin, brandy, and beer. So perfect a master was he also of the science of mechanism, and of their powers, that bolts, bars, locks, and doors, flew open at his touch. In fine, all art and nature bent to his magic powers. The mother,

in her knowledge of the stars and heavenly bodies, nearly rivalled the great Sir Isaac Newton; and her *principia* were as renowned amongst the tribes of gipsies as his amongst the philosophers.

She could tell and foretell all events; and see the coming of a comet or an earthquake in a coffee or tea-cup: she was the female *Æsculapius* of her nation; no noxious drugs, by force of fire and chemic art prepared, did she administer: but nature's choicest herbs, culled from earth's fragrant, flowery bosom, by her all-skilful hand, gave to the wearied drooping patient new life and spirits, and made him rise and hail the morn, grateful for new-born health and vigour.

The whole family was distinguished, respected, and admired: the father and

mother for their mental and moral endowments, and my charming Ægyptia for her beauty and personal accomplishments; for that was the name of the enchanting inconstant, though I familiarly used to call her *Gipp*, to which name she ever very condescendingly answered. She was the only child of enlightened and enraptured parents, who had studied, with unwearied care, from the cradle to the day she was betrothed to me, as my wife, to breed her up in the paths of virtue and honesty. But depraved nature, in humble cots, as well as in courts and cities, will too often set all human precept, however pure and perfect, at defiance; and launch the frail frame, with unbridled passion, into a sea of desperation. To those unhallowed paths did the cruel destinies force my lovely Ægyptia.

How different was the conduct of her parents, to that of the generality of those in the first circles in life ! They used no threats or parental influence over their child, to compel her to be my wife, on account of my fortune ; far from it : I had the lovely, fair *Ægyptia's* consent, before her parents ever knew my desires : we then solicited their's ; they assented, and with their blessing ratified the nuptial rites : nor did they, for one false step, desert and abandon their child, or suffer her, as many in high life have done, to plunge into a sea of troubles and guilt, without a kind parental admonition ; calling the wanderer back with the soothing and consolatory promises of forgiveness and forgetfulness of errors. They, on the contrary, sought her, and, with the most persuasive kindness, entreated her to return home, and, with the fullest assurance of their pro-



tection, pardon, and oblivion, to bury all past indiscretion in their hospitable but homely dwelling, and look to better deeds and days. But no parental tears or supplication could prevail on her to quit the seducing tinker; for such magic powers did he possess, and he had so entranced her soul and fixed such a spell upon her actions, that she would listen to no persuasions, and irrevocably resolved to share Tom Tinker's fate.

What will a generous and compassionate mind (when it reflects on the conduct of these unenlightened wanderers to their child) think of those parents, in the most enlightened and distinguished ranks, who, heathen-like, though professing themselves Christians, forget our Saviour's holy, humane example; who told the woman caught in adultery, to go and sin

no more ; though they themselves are the too frequent cause of their daughter's guilt ; for how often do we see a brutal tyranny exercised towards them, which makes them view the home that ought to be their greatest happiness and comfort, with horror and disgust. Alas ! how many are there, who, (to their eternal infamy be it said ! ) for the sake of sordid wealth, or gaudy, tinsel titles, have absolutely compelled their daughters, by threats most infamous and unhallowed, to wed the man they hate. The unjust and oppressive influence, too often used by parents and guardians, over children and wards, is emphatically described by the Marquis of Beccaria, in his *Essays on Crimes and Punishments* : “ *Conjugal fidelity,*” says he, “ is always greater in proportion as marriages are more numerous and *less difficult*. But when the interest

or pride of families, or paternal authority, not the *inclination* of the parties unite the sexes, *gallantry* soon breaks the slender ties, in spite of common *moralists*, who exclaim against the effect while they pardon the cause."

What must any man of reflection think of such a parent, who leads his own child to the altar, and in that sacred place, and under the awful sanctions that accompany it, is the compulsive cause of her prostitution?—for it is allowed by all sentimental philosophers, that the woman who marries without a proper friendship and affection for the man whom she weds, is but a prostitute licensed by the church. What must be his feelings, on the reflection of such an heinous transaction?—And what can the lustful ravisher expect,

but, brute as he is, to be perfected, by being made a beast.

View the fair wretched victim on the bridal, wedding-day; mournful she sighs away the live-long hours: her bosom pants not for the auspicious moment, when two hearts, united by the silken bands of love, retire to rest. With downcast looks, slow steps, and trembling limbs, she draws near the prostituted Hymeneal altar, sacred to love alone, there to surrender to a man she hates, her virgin sacrifice:—Foul befall the wretch who dares to perpetrate the unhallowed crime! at which nature itself revolts.

I will suppose, by way of example, that my sex is changed, and that I am

the victim which I have described, whom my parents have compelled to the altar, by threats of disinheritance, and expulsion from their doors;—I feel there is a God above, whose laws I reverence and adore, and no priestly power, sanctioned by custom, human, not divine, will I obey. I will resist the ravisher of my person; and if he attempt by force to perpetrate the deed, and rob the man I love of that dear virgin pledge, which so justly is his due, and which I will surrender to none but him, ere thus submit to his abhorred embrace, I'll stab him to the heart. Fly, wretched virgin, ere thou art polluted by this monster's touch!—This arm and sword shall protect thee until I deliver thy unspotted charms into the arms of thy grateful and distracted lover. It cannot be adultery that I tempt thee to commit:—no; it is holy matri-



mony; for mutual consent and consummation are the only ties\* which God commands. A priest may arrogate to himself that power; but the God above, with thy consent, and with thy husband's sacred pledges never to put thee from him, will sanction thy wedding-day. Again, I repeat, oh never surrender thy charms to the man thou cannot abide, who woos thee only with his wealth! It is base, it is vile in the extreme; it is worse than whoredom; for art thou not purchased at a greater price.

These learned wanderers, like the ancients, are extremely skilful in examining the entrails of beasts, and viewing the flight of birds; by both, they judge of,

\* Vide the chapter on Polygamy, Matrimony, and Monogamy.

and often foretell, future events. I confess, to my sorrow, I have had woful experience of their knowledge in two or three instances, which I shall relate.

In the evening of our nuptial day, when Phœbus, wearied with his golden race, turned his fiery-footed coursers to the west, and sought his watery couch, as I sat chiding the night's delay, in amorous dalliance with the lovely fair one, and conversation chaste, affectionate and instructive, with her enlightened and aged parents, an *horned owl*, of an enormous size, lighted on the tree which shaded our bower, and hooted loudly. The father, addressing himself to me, said, Son, (for so the tender parent ever called me,) behold, the bird of wisdom greets you, and hails your nuptial day!—Poh, said the old woman, (putting her two forefingers up to her

forehead, and pointing them towards her husband,) my dear, it is no such thing: you ought to know better. At that very time I never heeded the old woman's sagacious foresight, though often since the remembrance of it has caused my heart to ache; and, at this day, whenever I see an horned owl, or any owl, it brings to my mind my former misery and disgrace. Hence do I hate an owl, whether I view him in the field, in the church, or in the state.

So blindly lost in love was I, I never could harbour the slightest suspicion of my lovely bride, who, to my doating and deluded mind, was all innocence, all beauty, all perfection. My soul was wrapped in delight and extacy; for consent and consummation constituted our nuptials.

Another omen, in the morn, equally unknown and unsuspected then by me, assailed my ears. I was alarmed by the report of a gun. Rising from the bed, where many hours, unnumbered in Love's kalendar, passed but as moments, I opened the door of my rural abode, and asked who had been shooting in our peaceful habitations? The old man replied, It was me: I shot a cuckoo perched on the tree which shades your nuptial couch, a bird whose notes I hate—

“ O bird of woe,  
“ So fatal to the wedded state !”

At that time I gave ear to none of these omens; but, to my sorrow, they were all shortly verified.

These learned wanderers possess a singular faith; they believe not only in the

Pythagorean metempsychosis, that the human soul after death passes into the brute creation, but that the souls of birds, beasts, and fishes also pass into human bodies. Many instances the old woman pointed out to me, and endeavoured to make me believe ; in some of which, it must be allowed, strong parodies are to be drawn. Amongst many others, I recollect only the following transformations, and give them with her remarks.

Jays, said she, are turned into beaux, whose only beauty consists in their plumage ; wagtails into gay women : I thought this a very ludicrous idea, to my mind it was totally incomprehensible : wolves into lawyers, from their propensity to devour the human race ; carrion-crows into parish-priests, from their tything poultry ; hawks into gamblers.



from their pouncing on pigeons and doves; swans into sharpeners, from their having black legs \*; elephants into judges, from their known sagacity; hungry dogs into ministers and ex-ministers, quarrelling for and defending bones, the discontented all snarling at those happy dogs who have run away with and hold fast the prey †;

\* It certainly is very singular, but true it is, that, meet Newmarket *betters* at any time of the year, and any where, you never see them without boots, which certainly must be to prevent our seeing the colour of their legs through their stockings,

† Here I remember I stopped the old woman, or I dare swear she would have abused both parties like pickpockets. “Mother,” said I, “stop; no politics, let me entreat of you: besides, if thou indulgest thyself in improper freedom of speech in my presence, thou mayest do so elsewhere, when the beadle will be ordered to flog thee through the next town, on a full market-day: be cautious; for, besides the grief I

horned cattle into aldermen and common-council-men ; cuckoos into cuckold-makers, from their laying their eggs in other birds' nests ; parrots into gossips and idle prattling fellows ; and owls into a species of men who pass for men of abilities, because they put on a formal wise look, and speak little ; bees into beautiful women, from their stings and their honey ; wasps into old maids ; drones into bishops ; locusts into placemen and pensioners.

The old woman, breaking off from her Pythagorean dissertation, said to me, I dare say you have seen, in various parts

should feel for the pain thou wouldst suffer, my pride would suffer a mortal wound to see the parent of my lovely Ægyptia shamefully disgraced and tied to the tail of a cart."

of London, six or seven young girls, from fifteen to twenty, in one house, under the care of an elderly lady: they formerly were all young pullets; ruffs, and rees, and ottelans; and are as greedily sought after by people of a certain appetite as the birds are by epicures, and bear as high a price at their first appearance, when young, plump, and tender. There are also women, says she, (like birds of passage,) of a migratory nature, who remove, after a certain time, from St. James's and Mary-le-bone end of the town, to Covent-garden, then to the Strand, and from thence to St. Giles's and Wapping; from which latter places they frequently migrate much further, even to New Wales. I asked her, if they, like some birds, come back at certain seasons? She answered, Some few in

seven years, some in fourteen, and some not at all.

She also informed me, with her usual gravity, that, during their stay here, like birds, they made their nests upon feathers, some higher and some lower than others: at first they generally built them on the first floor, afterwards on the second, and then up in the cock-loft and garrets; from whence they generally took to the open air, and became ambulatory and noctivagous; and as their price grows less, their wandering increases, when many perish from the inclemency of the weather, and others take their flight abroad.

“Mother,” said I, “with sorrow have I viewed many of these unfortunate wo-

men, but never knew before that they had formerly been of the feathered race."

"They have, my son, and gay and gawdy in their plumage, hopping from twig to twig; enjoying the present moment of pleasure, and never looking to the following day." Continuing her instructive discourse; says she, "My son, let us walk to the neighbouring village, and, at the first butcher's shop, I will shew thee my powers and knowledge of future events by inspecting the entrails of beasts."

"Mother, I doubt not the powers of thy wondrous art: and, oh kind parent, I pray thee, instruct me in them!" To which she affectionately replied—"I will, my son:" so coming to the first slaughter-house, where an ox was newly dissected, she began to examine the entrails: fixing her eye directly on the liver of the animal, she thus unfolded her predictions:—"Son, by the entrails of this animal I plainly



see that the next Lord Mayor for the city of London will be chosen from the fishmongers' company." Turning up the hyde of the ox, I found the animal had no horns, for it was a poled bullock. "Mother," said I, "the animal has no horns; and can this have any reference to the Lord Mayor?" She replied, "Undoubtedly, my son; though I must acknowledge it is a very uncommon case." This event happened very early in October, before any common-hall had been called; and some time afterwards, on inquiry, I found that the Lord Mayor for that ensuing year had been elected from the fishmongers' company, and that he never had been married; which made it the more singular, and verified my mother's skill in omens.

I must here relate to you another wonderful proof of the knowledge and fore-

sight of my mother's black cat. A few days after my marriage, returning home, I found Tom Tinker with my wife. I, an innocent youth, and unversed in worldly deceit and intrigue, suspected not his base designs; my dear lovely Ægyptia telling me that he came only to stop an hole in the kettle. The sagacious Felis, who was extremely fond of me, followed me into our rural abode, and jumped on the table where the tinker was at work; and the moment this insidious disturber of my happiness touched the cat, the sagacious, friendly animal, seized his hand, and tore it grievously with his talons; being impelled by the consciousness that the tinker came there on no good design. "Would I had been endowed with the foresight of my purring friend, I might perhaps have prevented the future misery and disgrace which awaited me, and

have lived in happiness, even to these days, with the beautiful Ægyptia; but the cruel Destinies decreed it otherwise, and doomed me to misery, and the pangs of deserted love.

One day as I sat me down on the banks of a murmuring stream, shaded by an aged patriarch of the woods, venerable and revered as the holy Fanes of Nature, under whose spreading roofs our forefathers of old worshipped and sacrificed to their divinities, ere priests had wealthy benefices, or temples were built by human hands, the aged mother of my fair inconstant approached, and thus addressed me;

“ Son, listen to the voice of age mature, versed in all deeds past, present, and to come. To thee, in early youth, will I impart secrets which shall guide thee in

time to come, and teach thee how to baffle fickle fortune, to banter poverty, and assuage the heart's distress. Place not too firm a faith on woman's constancy : be kind, be generous, good-tempered, and affectionate to the fair ; but if they thy kindness wrongfully requite, and should fickle and inconstant prove, console thyself with another, and another too, and on many multiply thy kind, scattering thy maker's image o'er the land. One woful truth hast thou experienced of woman's infidelity ; and many more await not thee alone, but all mankind. Thou wert betrothed ; thou led'st her to the nuptial tent. Thou thinkest, perhaps, that hadst thou been married by a priest, the ceremony might have fixed her wandering passions \*. How little dost thou

\* At the moment the old woman's words made a great impression on my mind, and I am inclined to be-

know! Wilt thou believe that a ring put on a woman's finger, accompanied by a form of words, can bind a woman's affection, who, from nature and constitution, may be frail and fickle? Thy passion for Ægyptia was sudden, violent, and without reflection: beautifully formed, and cast in nature's choicest mould, you viewed her nimble as the deer bounding o'er the plain; first in the dance, and foremost in our sports: blindly in love, and captivated with her outward form, nought could relieve thy passion but possession: thou hast had it, and thou hast suffered; and thus will each and every man be deceived, who, blindly amorous, looks to nought but amorous indulgence. It is mutual friendship and sympathy, with an anxious desire for

lieve have been the chief cause of my never having been married.



each other's welfare, which alone can bind two souls in unison and concord: and rest assured, though thou mayest rival even bulls and goats in love, thou wilt never ensure woman's fidelity or affections: the insensible ligaments of the soul can alone secure true happiness. Then quit, my son, the town, the court, the tented field, and live with us in wandering happiness: wives thou shalt have as many as thou canst maintain; and thy mind shall ne'er again be bound to one capricious and faithless fair one."—"But," said I, "is it not sinful, mother, to have more wives than one?"—"My son, the wisest and the best of men, Solomon, had wives and concubines in abundance; and, in the Jewish history, we read it may be so, without offence to Heaven: nay, by Judaic law, it is permitted; and that law, you know, is still a sacred ca-

non. A priest may tell thee it is just to tythe and take large benefices for holy deeds, and fees for various rites performed, which they themselves have framed.” “ Mother, I did not think to hear the priests condemned by thee for acts which well thou knowest your wandering tribes commit.”—“ They also *tythe*, ’tis true, my son ; but then they take but from the *rich* : the priest makes no distinction.”

Led away, as I have been, in describing the miseries and disappointments I suffered from the cruel infidelity of my lovely Egyptia, I had nearly forgotten to relate a very curious ceremony, peculiar to these learned and enlightened wanderers, which took place at my nuptials. When the father and mother betrothed her to me, there was no body present but us four, and the black tom-cat, whose

sagacity I have already mentioned. The old woman took the sagacious *felis*, and placed him on a table; the old man, holding the black Tom by the body, commanded me to take the cat's left forepaw into my right hand, at the same time directing Egyptia to take the cat's tail in her left hand, as we stood on opposite sides of the table, which was placed directly east and west. But whether Egyptia pressed the cat's tail too hard, so as to produce any comical sensation in the animal, I cannot determine; but the animal, whilst the old man was repeating a few sentences in the Egyptian language, which I judged to be a parental blessing, the cat began to swear and spit, and shewed such discontent, either at his position on the table, or at the nuptial ceremony, that it was with the utmost difficulty we could keep him on the table till the old man had finished his benedic-

tion. My mother (for so I always called her) shook her head, and said to her husband, this forebodes no good. I valued not at the time what my mother said; but from fatal experience I was taught to revere both her knowledge, in foreseeing by omens future events, and the intuitive wisdom of the black cat. I have no doubt but the animal at that moment knew that the cruel destinies had decreed my misery, by Egyptia's future infidelity with the travelling tinker.

Ye lovely Cyprians, I have for a considerable time delayed discovering to you that invaluable secret, how to cure all critical tumours by a touch, which is of infinite consequence to you, and by which you and many others may receive very great and essential advantages, spiritual and temporal.

You will not suppose that I am much

troubled with superstition. My habits of life, and the way I have taken in the world, do not seem to encourage those dispositions of the mind which are called superstitious. But if you imagine that the gay, the thoughtless, and the dissipated, whatever evils or irregularities they may acquire, are cured of that, you are very much mistaken.

A being composed, as man is, of hope and fear, will be naturally led, under the immoderate impulses of those predominating springs of human action, to attach importance to circumstances and events which they do not naturally possess ; and those situations, in which the due equilibrium is lost, are proportionably subject to superstitious affections.

No men are more liable to be affected



by ominous circumstances than gamblers : and I once heard a gentleman, very long and very well known on the turf, solemnly declare, that in his journies from one race to another, if he happened to hear a magpie chatter from a tree by the road-side, he always made it a rule to bet against his own horses, which were never known to win after such an unfavourable omen.

Nor are you, ye Cyprians, less subject to these propensities than others ; for, whose life is more continually agitated by hopes and fears than your own ? I will leave the bottom of tea-cups, the burning of candles, and the varieties of a coal-fire, to washerwomen : but how much of your time do you pass under the apprehension of evil, or the expectation of good, in consulting those magical tablets which

compose a pack of cards, and which you apply to as containing the secrets of your future destiny?

I therefore do not apologize for informing you of a long-tried, and, as I suppose, effectual remedy; otherwise it would not have been continued to the present enlightened moment, in most parts of England; nay, it was even practised in London, till Tyburn was succeeded as a place of execution by the New Drop opposite Newgate. I allude to the practice of applying the hands and feet of persons in the act of being hanged, to wens and other tumours, as well as parts afflicted with the scrophula and other inveterate humours. I do not pretend to know in what the virtue of this application consists, nor how long it will remain; though I well remember being

shewn the desiccated hand of a person who had closed his life on a gallows, and was actually present when a poor man afflicted with a wen applied to be rubbed with it. It was in the possession of a Roman Catholic priest, in a distant part of England.

When, therefore, you are afflicted with wens or other troublesome tumours, you know your remedy. Do not be afraid, I beg of you, to look the gallows in the face ; it is, I must confess, an alarming object, but it has a powerful tendency to check untoward propensities. At all events, you will derive some good from such a visit : it may be of service to you in more ways than one ; and if I should prove serviceable to you in any way, the benevolent design of these pages will be amply fulfilled.

## CHAPTER III.

*On Matrimony and Polygamy.*

THAT a man should be confined to one woman for ever, is not only contrary to human nature and common sense, but also the most unjust institution ever invented and imposed on the too credulous world by man, and sanctified by priestcraft: and I assert, fearless of contradiction, that it finds no authority whatever in Scripture.

Marriage, by means of a priest, was first instituted by Pope Innocent the Third, in order to add one fine more to increase the benefices of the clergy, and

to enrich the see of Rome, glutted already by pious donations, religious extortions, impositions and frauds. Thus religion was made a stalking horse, to satisfy and indulge the pride, pomp, and ambition of churchmen.

In pious times, e'er priestcraft did begin,  
 Before polygamy was made a sin,  
 When man on many multiplied his kind,  
 E'er one to one was cursedly confin'd—

The first command given to man was, Increase and multiply, which we not only think the least of, but endeavour, by various laws, which are the sole invention of man, to prevent its effects. For certainly, many of our laws are unfavourable to the population of the land. That an opinion may be formed on this subject, from persons of a far sounder judgment, and more to be respected than my-



self, I shall refer the reader to two celebrated and distinguished characters, both of them eminently respected in their different callings. The first is a divine of great piety, learning and eloquence, I mean Mr. Madan, the well known author of *Thelephora*; a work expressly written to support the scriptural doctrine of a plurality of wives. The other, a distinguished soldier, and one of the most renowned captains of any period, Marshal Saxe. *Vide* his *Reveries and Reflections on the Misery of the Marriage State, and on the Decrease of Population, from that destructive law, by which a man is confined for life to one woman.*

Before I proceed to sanction my opinion by adducing various quotations from the learned divine's works, I shall mention a report which the clergy in gene-

ral propagated, and wished the world to believe of him, when he published his *Thelephora*, to shew mankind the insolence of priestcraft, and to open the eyes of the deluded world.

Matrimony by a priest was not commanded by the law of God, but instituted by the artifice of the church of Rome, to add one link more to the chain of submissive bigotry with which they held mankind in bondage and subjugation; and also to add another tax on the human race, to enrich their coffers, indulge their pride, and increase their power, by not even permitting man to increase and multiply without their permission, and paying tribute to them. Not satisfied with levying a baptismal tax on the human species, on its first entrance into the world, as well as a funeral imposition at its final exit;

and by receiving the tenth part of the product of a considerable portion of the earth,—the church of Rome has made matrimony a sort of philosopher's stone, by banns, dispensations, licenses, and fees\*. Therefore the priests, as I have already observed, fearful that Mr. Madan's Thelephora might open the eyes of mankind, and expose such pious frauds; and not being able to confute his writings, because they could not confute the laws of God, as delivered in the Scriptures; they endeavoured to throw a stigma on the work, and to invalidate it, if possible, in the public opinion, by scandalously circulating a report, that the learned

\* Formerly the priests had such power, that a new-married couple were not permitted to cohabit for a certain time, without paying the church for a dispensation: and a man was not allowed *Christian* burial, unless he bequeathed something to the church.

and truly pious Madan was not in his right senses when he wrote his book. I will leave those to judge who have read his book, if it be the work of a madman; and shall content myself with observing, that, if he was mad, he was mad with religious good sense and understanding. Such traducers of true piety and virtue I will boldly brand with blasphemy; for, by accusing Madan of being mad, they accuse the Scriptures of insanity. For, in no one instance does Mr. Madan, throughout his whole work, give any opinion, or assert any one point whatever, without the sanction and authority of Scripture, which he quotes to the reader *chapter* and *verse*.

Before I proceed to give you quotations from Madan's book, and from the Scriptures, I will give extracts from the law

books of our country. *Jacob's Law Dictionary*, title *Marriage* : “Before the time of Pope Innocent III. there was no solemnization of marriage in the church; but the man came to the house where the woman inhabited, and led her home to his own house, which was all the ceremony then used.” Again; *Judge Blackstone's Commentary*, vol. i. p. 439, quarto edit. “It is held to be essential to a marriage, that it be performed by a person in orders, though the intervention of a priest to solemnize the contract is merely *juris positivi*, and not *juris naturalis aut divini*; it being said that Pope Innocent III. was the first who ordained the celebration of *marriage in the church*, before which it was totally a *civil contract*.” Thus much for law, to prove that priests had originally nothing to do with



matrimony, or matrimony with priest-craft.

We shall now proceed to the superior authority of Scripture, which proves that polygamy was sanctioned by the Levitical law. Abraham, who took unto him even a handmaid, is not recorded as less pure than Isaac, who appears to have had but one wife. Nor is Isaac said to be more pure than his son Jacob, who had four: we read of them all as in an equal state of glory in the kingdom of heaven; Matth. viii. 11. but of no sorrow or repentance on their part, on account of their different situations while on earth. "Isaac took Rebekah and brought her into his mother's tent, and she became his wife." (Gen. xxiv. 67.) "And Laban took Leah, his daughter, and brought her

to Jacob, and he went in unto her: and Laban gave him Rachel, his daughter, to wife, and he went in also unto Rachel."

The above quotation I have given to prove that marriage under the Jewish law, which bears the character of inspiration, was sanctioned by the man taking unto him the woman, and cohabiting with her, without any canonical ritual. The consent of the parties was sufficient: but then the man was forbidden to put his wife away all the days of his life—"Because he had humbled her," Deut. xxii. 29. I shall now further prove, from Scripture, that God not only sanctioned polygamy, but blessed the offspring of the second wife during the life of a former one. David, when he had a child by Bathsheba during her husband Uriah's life, was severely reprimanded, and that child

struck to death by the immediate power of divine justice, 2 Sam. xi. 15. But Solomon, begotten by David, and born of the same woman, after Uriah's death, and in a state of polygamy, was called Zedediah, or "beloved of the Lord," and acknowledged by divine approbation as David's lawful issue, 1 Kings v. 5. and as such succeeded to his throne. For this and further particulars I must refer to Mr. Madan's works, who says, "All this shews that polygamy is not, nor ever was an object of the *seventh* commandment. To assert that it is, is not only without evidence, but against all the evidence which the sacred writings afford us on the subject." I well know, priests pretend that the Gospel prohibits polygamy; but I cannot find such a prohibition in the evangelical writings: and, in my opinion, to say that our Saviour came

to alter the law of God, is irreligious in the highest sense, as it is positively declared by himself that he came to fulfil it : “ I came not to destroy the law, but to fulfil it ; and not one jot or tittle shall pass from the law.” Let me ask, therefore, how any thing can be sinful that has received the sanction of such supreme and sacred authority ?

In addition to the various opinions and quotations from Mr. Madan, I shall give one very strong and convincing proof that polygamy was sanctioned by the divine law, which I do not recollect that the learned divine, whom I have so often quoted, has mentioned in any part of his works. It is expressly said by St. Paul, 1 Corinthians, vi. 9. “ Fornicators shall not inherit the kingdom of God.” Now, if it had not been permitted a man to

take unto him more than one wife at a time, most of our Hebrew forefathers must have lived in a state of fornication, and consequent disobedience to the divine law.

I could adduce many instances to serve my purpose, and strengthen my argument, if one were not sufficient. Solomon, whose pre-eminent wisdom was the gift of heaven, would, in such case, have been begotten in fornication, and accursed by the Lord, instead of blessed ; for he was born of a subsequent wife of David, during the life of various previous wives. Is not this another proof, in addition to Mr. Madan's assertions, that polygamy has received a celestial sanction, and that marriage by means of a priest did not then exist : for I read of no priest performing any ceremony when



David took unto him the wife of Uriah, after his death.

To prove to you in what direct opposition the law of man, in this particular, is to the divine law, I shall now suppose a case :

A gentleman of considerable fortune and estate, not entailed, is enamoured of a young lady of fashion, and she of him. He tells her he wishes to make her his wife, but that he is adverse to the present forms of matrimony, as solemnized by a priest : he requests her to read the Scriptures, and weigh well the subject in her own mind ; and leaves her to determine whether she can consent to the primitive law of the Old Testament, which does not require the intervention of a priest, or any ceremony of ecclesiastical inven-

tion. She accordingly reads, reflects, and consents. To make the case still stronger : Before he *takes her unto him never to put her away all the days of his life*, he settles a dower on her of one thousand *per annum*, and binds himself by legal obligations to provide for the children he may have by her. Nay more, he leads her into the church ; but does not permit a priest to attend ; no, nor even the clerk of the parish ; but, in presence of friends to both parties, he lays his hand on the altar, and, before God, declares, that he takes that woman to be his wife, and never to put her away all the days of his life. This ceremony being passed, he leads her to his dwelling, they make merry with their friends, and she becomes his wife.

In a few days this affair reaches the

ears of the lady's brother, who is an officer, fond of gallantry, and disposed to draw his sword whenever he is offended, unless disarmed by the humble submission of the offender. We may therefore very naturally suppose the following conference to ensue between the officer and the husband.

“ Sir, you have dishonoured me and my whole family; you have debauched my sister; and, if you will not marry her, and *make her* an honest woman, you must and shall fight me.”

“ Sir, I have not debauched your sister; she is my true and lawful wife; and, as well as myself, is convinced that we are as much husband and wife as if a thousand priests had united us; and I will never submit to any law or cere-

mony performed by priests, which is not ordained by God. I have married your sister according to that law as it is delivered in the Scriptures, and never will submit to any other ceremonial." In short, the brother obliges the husband to fight him, so tender is he both of his family's honour and that of his own, though perhaps at that moment he is living in adultery with some honest man's wife, and has adorned the brows of half-a-dozen better men than himself: nay, he may have seduced many apprentice-girls and servant-maids, who at that very time are obliged to prostitute themselves to obtain the common necessities of life. To strengthen my case, I will suppose this gentleman to be no polygamist, but that he has taken the woman to him as his lawful wife, and to have no' other during her life.

At length they fight ; and we will suppose that the brother kills the husband, and, according to the laws of our country, is brought to trial. A judge might say to the jury, in summing up the charge, after expatiating on the crime of duelling, “ It is my duty, in justice to the prisoner, to request you to pay proper attention to the crime of the deceased, who has debauched his sister, and rendered unhappy and disgraced a worthy and honest family.” I think in such a case the prisoner would be found guilty only of manslaughter. But I solemnly declare, that were I on such a jury I would give my vote to hang him, and I trust I should find others of my opinion, for having *murdered* his sister’s *husband* ; yes, I say husband, for so he was in the eye of Heaven. We will, however, to give the subject every possible



illustration, suppose that the husband kills the brother. A judge might say to the jury, in summing up the evidence, " The prisoner before you has first debauched a young lady, dishonoured, disgraced, and rendered miserable a worthy and reputable family, and has killed the brother for standing forth to vindicate the honour both of his sister and his own, and endeavouring to compel the prisoner to marry his sister." Were I on the jury, I should take the liberty of speaking to the judge in a manner which it may not be necessary for me to mention.

I am of opinion, if the brother was to kill the husband he would be acquitted, and if the husband killed the brother I am doubtful whether he would not suffer; but I do most solemnly avow, that were I on the juries I would give my

voice that the brother who had killed the husband should suffer death for having murdered his sister's real husband, by compelling him to fight a duel: *vice versa*, if the husband had killed the brother, I would vote for his acquittal, having been compelled to fight, and therefore guilty of no offence but what the laws determine to be manslaughter. I solemnly declare before my God, that had I a daughter who was an only child, and, as I trust she would be, most dear to me, I would give my consent to her marrying a man according to the laws of our forefathers, in preference to the present forms of our established Church. Priests may be of this or that opinion, but mankind are now arrived at that enlightened period to have an opinion of their own, and no longer to be affrighted at the fulminating anathemas of the Church, or

the dread of excommunication. Priests are very necessary, and very good members of society, when *they pray for us*, and *pray with us*; when they explain and enforce the Scripture precepts to their parishioners, perform many holy duties, (amongst which, by the by, I shall not include matrimony,) and do not prostitute the pulpit to politics and temporal affairs. *There is no possibility of keeping society together without religion, but it may be done without priestcraft.*

It may be said by some of my numerous readers, What view can the author have in asserting that the divine law sanctioned polygamy in former times, and therefore cannot be reasonably considered as an offence in our own? I will answer briefly—The only motive which induces me, is the tender regard I have

for lovely woman, who (*lamentabile dictu!*) is too frequently seduced and abandoned to misery by base unfeeling man, without the least infidelity on their part.

I do not mean that man should take unto him a second or third wife merely from caprice or fancy ; but only in case of some mental or corporeal defect, which renders his cohabiting with his former wife impossible. In the present state of matrimonial law, if a woman is declared an incurable lunatic, or to have some other irradicable disease, which may occasion her to bring forth a race of unfortunate and diseased children, or may even endanger the life of her husband, he cannot, in either case, take unto him another wife. If, therefore, he has not

the power totally to stifle his natural passions, he is tempted to commit adultery, or fornication, or whoredom, or all of them, from not being permitted to take another wife by the law of the land.

Now I will come to the point, whercin my enlightened readers will, I doubt not, agree with me, that in certain cases polygamy should be allowed; and that man who had *humbled a virgin* shall not be permitted to *put her away all the days of his life, because he had humbled her*, which is an express law, as we find it recorded in the Bible. There can surely be no solid reason alleged why that law should be abrogated, and why a custom, hallowed in the days of Moses, should not be permitted in our own. In this case, we should not see a fiftieth part of



the prostitutes walking the streets, whom we now daily behold dying with hunger and perishing with disease.

For a moment I will lay all religion aside, and ask any man a simple, moral question. Do you not think a virgin, on whom you have prevailed, by promises of protection and the most tender regard, to quit her parents and sacrifice her charms to your wishes, is not as much entitled to your protection, as long as she is true to your bed, as if one or twenty priests had read a ceremony prior to the consummation? A man cannot turn his wife out of doors without a suitable provision, unless she is an adultress; yet a man may debauch a virgin, live with her for years, until the bloom of youth deserts the cheek, and then abandon her, and not give her one farthing's maintenance, al-

though her conduct towards him has displayed one successive scene of fidelity and affection. I tell you this woman is as much his wife, according to the decrees of Holy Writ, by which it is commanded, as I have already quoted, and cannot too often repeat, that he shall *not put her* away all the days of his life, because he has humbled her, as if the archbishop of Canterbury had performed the marriage ceremony.

I shall proceed no further on this subject in this part of my Work, as I have expatiated most fully on the crime in my Chapter on the Lamentable Miseries of Female Prostitution.

If any should suspect that I wish, in the smallest degree, to render matrimony less reputable than it is, he will do me

great injustice ; far be such impolitic and irreligious intentions from me ! On the contrary, it is my most sincere wish, if a man, by premeditated promises and persuasion, succeeds in seducing a virgin, that she should be deemed as lawfully married to him as if the ceremony had been solemnised by a clergyman. The Levitical laws specify, that if any man be found lying with a woman betrothed or married to an husband, it is adultery in both, and both must die. But if a man is found lying with a virgin not betrothed, she shall be his wife : he may not put her away all his days, because he has humbled her\*.

\* Our law, in the first instance, fines the offender a sum of money ; and in the second, if a young woman is debauched and got with child, the father pays forty pounds to the parish, never concerns himself

I know full well, it is said, that our Saviour forbade polygamy : but I cannot reconcile this idea to my mind. To the volumes, therefore, which have been written on the meaning of the single word *γυνή*, and on its being used in the singular number, I refer the reader to form his opinion\*.

any farther about the infant, and sets the much-injured woman adrift on the world, to seek a livelihood in the best way she can.

\* The seventh chapter of Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians has been much spoken of, and adduced in evidence that the Christian doctrines forbade polygamy. I have studied it with great attention, and confess it does not appear to me in that light. But I will put a rational question to the reader, totally framed from my own ideas, and not from any other author: If Christ had judged polygamy sinful, would he not, when preaching to the people, (many of whom were polygamists,) have said, in plain and expressive terms, "It is unlawful for you to take unto you a second wife during the life of the first; ye that have sinned, go

I am anxious that my meaning should be perfectly understood, for thus condemning monogamy as a fixed law, and

forth, and henceforth sin no more." Our Saviour never did say any such thing; but, on the contrary, spake in the following manner: "And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east, and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven." Matthew, viii. 11. Abraham and Jacob had several wives, Isaac only one; but Christ mentioned them as being all three in heaven. I will ask another question: Can any thing be construed illegal, or sinful, which God ever permitted as a custom or law? I know full well, it is said that polygamy never was given to Moses by God as a law; certainly it was not, or it would have made another commandment. But, did not the Jewish nation live in polygamy at the time that God conversed with Moses on Mount Sinai? It is therefore a plain incontestible proof that the Almighty sanctioned it, or he would have directed Moses to forbid it. He blessed, and received Abraham and Jacob into heaven, who had four handmaids and wives. If two of the most pious men of the present age were to marry a second



never to be broken through but in case of adultery. I am convinced, by my knowledge of this world's affairs, that it

wife, they would be convicted of felony within the benefit of clergy, to which they would be indebted for not being hanged; whilst the adulterer, and the seducer of a virgin, is admitted into the first companies in the country.

Further, if a drunken fellow in a fit of mad intoxication, or a nobleman of ten thousand a-year, force an old widow woman of sixty, they will be both hanged for a rape: but if the most opulent man in the kingdom debauches a virgin, with her consent, though to prevail on her he has made her every promise of protection and support, there is no penalty inflicted on him if he deserts her the next day.—To whom then is the greatest injury done?—to the old woman who is ravished, or the virgin seduced, and after the fairest promises abandoned? There can be no doubt on this point: yet thus the law of the land stands at present. I am of opinion the law may be amended, in favour of the too credulous, lovely fair, without introducing polygamy, or compelling every man to marry the virgin whom he has debauched; and shall

is the bane of human happiness, destructive to population, and is the cause of prostitution in many instances, as I have already exemplified.

Before I proceed to explain my further reasons why polygamy in some particular instances should be permitted, I desire it may be well understood, that I am no advocate for that wild and licentious use of it, as practised by the Mahometans ; but, to use the words of the learned and pious Madan, “ an holy and sober use of

submit it to the opinion of the clergy and legislators, in my chapter on Female Prostitution and Ruin. In these days, if a gentleman seduces the daughter of a man of fashion, and will not marry her, he may be scouted ; but if he debauches twenty servant-maids or apprentices, and turns them into the streets to seek their bread by prostitution, who is there that will think of reproving him, or act towards him as if he thought him the worse for it ?

marriage," tending to the benefit of population, and of course to the strength and riches of our country : neither that man should be permitted to take as many wives as he pleased, merely to gratify his caprice or fancy, and turn them adrift at his pleasure. Far be it from my thoughts ! But there are many instances where the happiness of man might be promoted, and prostitution be prevented, by permitting polygamy ; and I trust I shall very shortly, in the sequel, be able to prove it. But before I finish with scriptural remarks, and with Mr. Madan, whom I consider as a most profound commentator on the sacred writings, I shall take upon me to offer a few additional but most substantial evidences in favour of polygamy.

Christ was born of a polygamous race,

both on the side of Joseph, and of Mary his mother. For Solomon was the ancestor of Joseph, who was the son of David by Bathsheba, whilst David had other wives living, and by whom he had children. Nathan, the ancestor of Mary, we can trace back to be of the lineage of David, and most certainly of polygamous race, for David had many wives ; and if I am not mistaken, Nathan was also, as well as Solomon, the son of Bathsheba. What will the reader think of this?—I will relate Mr. Madan's own remarks on the lineage of Christ, and leave the reader to his own reflections, without any further comments on the subject. Madan writes as follows: "This matter is not a mere speculative point, but of a most important concern ; for, if women, taken by men already married, were not lawful wives in God's sight, then

commerce with them was illicit, and the issue must be illegitimate, and, if so, uninheritable. Whither will this carry us? Further, I dare say, than the most zealous *anti-polygamists* mean it should, even to the bastardizing the MESSIAH himself." In the next page, vol. II. page 14 and 15, Madan continues thus: "If there be a failure here, nothing can set it right, even to the latest posterity. We must, therefore, either allow that polygamous marriages were valid and lawful in the sight of God, or deny Christ to be the son of David; for, in the language of the scripture, a bastard, or one corruptly born, is not a son. Nor could he be hereditary king of Israel; for, to make out his title to this, all his ancestors up to David must be proved to be David's lawful and inheritable issue: for that is one meaning of the seed of David according to the



flesh, Rom. i. 3; or, as we should say in legal language, *heir of his body lawfully begotten*. This could not be on any other footing than a *polygamous* marriage being as lawful as any other, in the sight of, and judgment of, the Most High; otherwise *Solomon* was *νόθος καὶ οὐκ υἱός*, *a bastard and not a son*, through whom must be derived the heirship to David on Christ's supposed father's side. So likewise was *Nathan* a bastard and not a son, through whom Christ's heirship to the throne of Israel must be derived on the side of his mother. It is sufficient to prove one link in the chain of Christ's genealogy from David faulty, to defeat all his title to the appellation of *Son of David, King of Israel*."—Again, page 17, the same author continues:—

“ If a polygamous marriage were unlawful, and of course null and void before God ; then was not Christ legally descended of the house and lineage of David, but from a spurious issue, not only in the instances above mentioned, but also in others which might be mentioned. So that when Christ is supposed to condemn polygamy as adultery, contrary to the institution of marriage, and to the seventh commandment, he must at the same time be supposed to defeat his own title to the character of the MESSIAH, concerning whom God had sworn to David, that, of the fruit of his loins according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne. See Acts xi. 30, with Psal. cxxxii. 11. I will set up thy seed after thee, which shall proceed out of thy bowels, and I will establish his kingdom. See 2 Sam. vii. 12. The same

is expressed, 1 Chron. xxii. 9. by—*Behold a son shall* be born unto thee!—which, though primarily spoken of Solomon, ultimately points to Christ, as 2 Sam. vii. 14. with Heb. i. 5, demonstrably shew; there Christ is emphatically styled *The Son of David.*”

I shall now lay aside Mr. Madan's work, and examine marriage in its present state, instituted, as it is supposed to be, for the benefit and happiness of civil society, by human institution.

I never in my life paid my addresses to any lady on the score of matrimony; therefore, married men must solve this mystery. I am speaking merely from opinion; but I am inclined to believe, that no modest young woman will admit her intended husband to take any parti-

ular liberties with her till the nuptial ceremony is past ; when darkness even can no longer hide those defects which heretofore she may have studiously laboured to conceal, for which no great art is required ; as Esculapian power, with drugs mellifluous, and Oriental gums, can for a while stifle the most noxious vapours, and to the foetid smell a violet fragrance give. For, the sage matron, in various arts renowned, and long experienced in deceit, can also hide deformity, and with skill superior to the gardener's power, who binds the warped saplin : for she excels in skill to palm the warped blighted fruit on the injured husband by base deception. She, for all dire defects, a substitute supplies, with belts, with springs, with ligaments, and artificial limbs. But when the deluded anxious lover unlooses the mechanic rai-

ment, then naked truth explores abhorred deceit, and nature reassumes her warped form ; and, in the morning's dawn, the false fragrant odours vanish ; leaving to the disappointed bridegroom the noxious, tainted, blighted fruit, fair to the eye, but bitter to the taste, and poisonous to the touch :—And what succeeds ?

Why, love's gardener, indignant at the poisoned infamy, roots from his sacred bed, where nought but Cupid and the zephyrs ought to dwell, all offensive plants, all bitter fruits ; and plants the melting blooming peach, and lovely violet, delightful to the taste, and fragrant to the smell.

Oh ! much to be lamented man ! the choicest gifts of Heaven in this world are to thee denied ; thou art bound *for life*



(or doomed to felony) to one thou cannot love—miserable is thy fate. Instead of being blessed with symmetry and perfection in thy arms, dreaming that thou reposest on a bed of choicest flowers, and waking in the morn to hail the fragrant blushing full blown rose, and press it to thy bosom, thy fate is reversed, for noxious vapours assail thee in thy sleep; and waking, thou wakest to lament deformity of body, constitutional defect, and concealed disease. Loathing, thou leavest the disgusting object to curse the fraud she has been taught to practise.

The priest may bind thee to this mated hypocrite, and the iron arm of law, which makes it felony for thee to marry another, may dub her thy wife: but no law exists to prevent thee from taking unto thee another woman, more suited to thy mind,

more adapted to thy affections. No law yet exists to prevent thee from sending the fraudulent bride to all the comfort she can derive from a separate maintenance.

Then follow nature's laws, sanctioned by Heaven, and seek some beauteous and more perfect fair one : I tell thee it is no sin to take unto thee a virgin pure ; it is her consent that constitutes the righteous deed : but if thou humblest her, thou canst never put her from thee ; she is as much thy wife as if one hundred priests had sanctioned the union.

I shall now proceed to mention certain disorders which render it impossible for man to cohabit with a woman, and then apply to the judgment of every man of common sense, whether it be not

both impolitic, immoral and unjust, that a man be bound, *in such cases*, for life, to one woman, and not be permitted to take unto him another.

Among these disorders are, incurable madness, and inveterate leprosy. There is another, which, though rarely found, does yet exist, the *morbis pediculosus*, which is of all the pests in nature the most obnoxious. Oh ! with what disgust, too late, I discover so fell a fraud and pestilence ! instead of the little winged loves fanning me with gentle zephyrs in my sleep, my body is assailed with noxious reptiles waking me from balmy rest, seeking retreat in my cleanly pores, to which my well-braced body denies them entrance. Assailed by this reptile host, I am driven in disgust and torment from the field of love.

Though man may meet, and often does, with women afflicted by the above calamities and diseases, which render it impossible for him to live with them in a state of connubial comfort, it is felony for him to take unto him another wife. He must therefore *burn*; or is induced to commit either adultery, fornication, or whoredom. Whereas, were he permitted, in particular cases, to marry again, he would live in virtue; to repeat the words of Dryden:

“ In pious times, ere priestcraft did begin,  
 “ Before polygamy was made a sin;  
 “ When man on many multiplied his kind,  
 “ Ere one to one was cursedly confin’d:”

Then man had the opportunity of ameliorating his situation, by relieving his wretched state of marriage, and living in virtue and betrothed matrimony; but now he is compelled to turn whoremaster, or

fornicator, when either the misfortunes or diseases of the wife compel him to separate himself from her bed. I again repeat, that I am far from wishing that a general and indiscriminate use of polygamy should be permitted, but only in particular cases already mentioned, or others of similar nature.

The prohibition of polygamy has, in some instances, been a very great obstacle to the propagation of the Christian religion. The missionaries sent among the Indians to preach the gospel, acknowledge, that, to incline them to monogamy, is one of the most arduous tasks which they have to perform; and that many on this account have rejected Christianity, who otherwise would have embraced it. There are a set of Christians living in China, who live in polygamy. If I am not



mistaken, Puffendorf relates this circumstance. It appears to me, as if these missionaries never studied the Old Testament. But priests must obey the law of civil institutions, or they will not meet with preferment, and obtain ecclesiastical wealth and honours.

At the beginning of this Chapter, I expressed my intention of giving Marshal Saxe's Reflections on Polygamy; but I find it would swell these pages to a very great extent. I therefore shall, for particulars, refer the reader to his Reveries. He proves, by arithmetical calculations, that *monogamy* is destructive to population, and declares that it is hostile to the happiness of man. I am positively of opinion, that it is not only destructive to population, and the chief source of man's misery, but that it is pro-

ductive of much intrigue, fornication, and whoredom ; of which I am vain enough to imagine that I have given incontestable proofs. It is impossible to maintain con-nubial connection with a diseased woman ; and nearly as intolerable to be confined either to a drunkard or a termagant shrew : to be saluted with the heel of a shoe on the head, instead of the kiss of affection,—or to have my bed polluted by Bacchanalian fumes, instead of fragrant breath of health,—are equally repugnant to cleanliness, comfort, and good-humour.

It will certainly be acknowledged, that it is the duty of the legislature of every country to enact laws which encourage morality and strengthen religion ; most particularly amongst the middling and lower orders of the people ; for the more they live in virtue and a due sense of re-

ligion, the less liable is the State to be convulsed by their tumults. In this country, if due consideration were given to the subject, the most lovely and weaker part of human nature might be effectually protected from ruin and misery ; and the lower order of people, as well as the rich, might be induced to lead more chaste and virtuous lives : but as long as it is felony to marry a second wife during the life of the former, though she be either insane, diseased, or drunken, &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. &c., it is to be feared adultery, fornication, and whoredom are not likely to be diminished ; nor can we reasonably expect an amendment in the moral character of the people respecting those particular vices. I shall put the following case, which, however, I do not suppose will ever be added to the

voluminous reports of the courts of law.

If a gentleman of fortune, or nobleman, should seduce the wife of a peasant, I mean the man of one shilling per day, would a British jury award some thousand pounds damages to the peasant, as they frequently have awarded to the rich and noble? But is not the happiness of the peasant as fully destroyed by the loss of the partner of his affections? Is not his grief as poignant as the nobleman's? Are not his feelings as deeply wounded by the seduction and loss of his fair helpmate, who was used to welcome him, after his daily labour, at the threshold of his cheerful cottage? Alas! his joys are fled! and, when the sun retires to rest, reluctantly he trudges home to

view his mournful and deserted dwelling, and sorrow marks his wearied steps. It is not that a British jury will not do him justice : they are the palladium of our lives, our happiness, our liberties ; and the guardians of our property and our rights. But he cannot appear before this just tribunal ; for he is poor, and possesses not the means of obtaining justice. He may, indeed, sue *in forma pauperis*, that is, without fees to lawyers, or expence of process ; but he cannot afford to give his time and attendance, nor make the personal exertions, or suffer the personal inconvenience of prosecuting such a suit, harassed as he would be by all the delays, and impediments, and quirks, and quibbles, which a wealthy opponent could purchase. A greater evil still attends him, pregnant with immorality and vice ; for he cannot



procure a divorce : his circumstances will not afford him that relief which the affluent can acquire. The equality of the law of Britain has been a disputed point by the invidious partizans of other governments : why, then, give them cause to censure us ? How is the equality evinced ? Is it in the expence of procuring a divorce ? But yet, it is said, the law is open to every one. So it is : so also is the London Tavern ; but it is not every one who can afford to go into it. If a country-man were even to put his nose in at the door, the waiter would kick him down the steps ; and if he were to appear in the lobby of the House of Lords, with a petition, praying to be divorced *gratis* from his wife, it is likely that the serjeant at arms would take him for some poor lunatic, and send him to Bedlam hospital. Such a case, I must acknow-

ledge, is not, in any degree, likely to happen, for very obvious reasons. Besides, those doors are not to be unfolded to a divorce under three hundred pounds: in most cases it is much more expensive. Nor is there an attorney in London, or any where else, to be found, who will undertake so expensive a cause without his fees. I can see no reason why a country-man should not be divorced at the *Quarter-sessions*, as well as a nobleman in the *House of Lords*. That not being the case, they live in adultery, fornication, and whoredom; for the wife cohabits with some other man, and the husband debauches some girl in the parish, who, if she is unfortunate enough to become a mother, is stamped by human law with the opprobrious, though unjust, name of a prostitute; though the man who debauches her would be guilty of felony

were he to marry her, which he would most probably be willing to do, did the law of man permit him. Were the poor fellow able to procure a divorce, he naturally would marry again, and live according to the will and commands of his Maker. Not to put a more harsh construction on his unhappy fate, the legislature at least overlooks him; but at the same time it gives ten thousand pounds damages to the nobleman. Make it but a pleasure, and suitable to his convenience, for man to live a virtuous life, and make morality more pleasing than vice; let divorces at a small expence be obtained, and, in *some* instances, polygamy permitted, we should soon find virtue prevail and prostitution diminish: we then should soon perceive an increase of true religion amongst the lower orders; and the State would not have a

doubtful, but most solid security for their loyalty and submission to the laws. More good would be derived from salutary institutions, inducing man to lead a virtuous and chaste life, and by permitting him to take unto him, in CERTAIN CASES, and under certain regulations, another wife, than from the compulsive plan of forbidding any person whatever, except doctors and apothecaries, to walk the street during the hours of divine service: for a man, if not religiously inclined, although you certainly may compel him by an act of parliament to stay within doors, you cannot prevent him, if he chooses it, from singing Lillibillero, or the Black Joke, at home. You may confine him for ever to one woman, let her be both diseased and drunken; but you cannot compel him to propagate his species on her, or prevent his going to

the brothel. I am convinced there are thousands and tens of thousands of men, who now live in dissipation, debauchery, and drunkenness, that are naturally inclined to a moral and decorous conduct; and, were they permitted to take unto them another wife, and provide for the present one, would lead a virtuous and domestic life: but they fly from their wives as they would from the plague, when they make their homes uncomfortable to them. In dissipation they vainly seek for comfort and relief; and debauchery walks hand in hand with it; they are twin-sisters, both bred in the same womb, and brought to life by the misery and distraction of the mind.

To incline mankind more towards a proper sense of religion, and to inculcate moral principles, lenient and persuasive



measures must be used: compulsion is sure to disgust. I confess my dissatisfaction when I hear a clergyman railing at his congregation; and could hardly prevail on myself to keep my seat when I have heard them talk of nothing but of damnation, hell, and the devil, as many of them do, instead of holding up the Christian religion as the purest system of forgiveness, love, and charity, which it really is, and whose spirit is lavish in its promises of pardon and salvation. Were all our clergy to act and to preach after the same manner of some of our truly enlightened, learned, and orthodox divines, who command both honour and respect from all who hear them, I am inclined to think that their churches would be more frequented, and mankind be rendered far more happy. Man must be led, and induced, by mild, persuasive, and lenient measures,

to the true sense of his religion : he must not be driven, or terrified. Religion does not consist in going to church twice a-day, and carrying a hypocritical, canting, forbidding countenance through the whole week ; for, though religious institutions should be observed, and public worship should be attended, vital religion does not entirely depend on exterior observances, though they greatly assist it : for an high sense of devotion and piety may be found in the temple of Nature, in viewing the harmony and connection of all its parts, and contemplating the wondrous works of the Divinity, even in the meanest productions of the creation.

It is to be lamented that so many blockheads are admitted to take holy orders ; for, in many families, if one child is more uncommonly stupid, proud, and

obstinate than the rest, and deemed not to be endowed with sufficient abilities either for trade, law, or the army, the father says, he will do very well for a parson. The King may make a priest a bishop, and a private individual a peer; but his Majesty cannot give the former abilities, nor can he make the latter a gentleman. Doubly honourable is he who has acquired his nobility by noble actions. Such a man will have precedence in the opinion of the wise and good, before those who are right honourable only by birth and riches, and are compelled to rifle the monuments of the dead for their genealogies. Virtue alone can bestow nobility, and glory exalt it. A mitre gives riches and titles to a priest; but it is not always accompanied by good sense, toleration, and humility. High church riches and haughtiness too frequently

stalk hand in hand, whilst the inferior, but modest and laborious priest in the vineyard, who is resident amongst his parishioners, imparting to them all the knowledge with which he is endowed, and performing all the duties attached to his function, with zeal and affection, is too frequently in possession of little more than the mere necessities of life. The inequality of income among the clergy is monstrous. I am of opinion, that no clergyman in the remotest village in Britain should have less than two hundred pounds per annum, though there are many who serve two churches for forty\*. A priest is neither to wallow in luxury, nor to deny himself the good cheer, the mirth, conviviality, and innocent amuse-

\* I am informed many clergymen in Wales are so poor as to be obliged to sell spirits and keep small shops.

ments of this world. Austerity of manners, and a too rigid, pedantic, and recluse deportment, is not so necessary as some are foolishly inclined to believe. It may please the bigot, but it will make but few proselytes ; I do not believe a man more virtuous, or one whit less vicious, who lives on vegetables and water, than the one who daily eats two pounds of meat, and drinks a cheerful cup, though he may be a greater hypocrite. Before I quit the subject of monogamy, I cannot help relating the injustice which attends those who profess the Catholic faith ; for if the wife of a Roman Catholic be even caught in adultery, he may be divorced ; but the tenets of his religion forbid him ever to marry again as long as the woman, though she be an adultress, is living. When I say he cannot marry during that woman's life. I mean that he



cannot, as a Catholic, marry without leave from the Pope. He can indeed marry again, if he chooses so to do : but then he is looked upon no more as a real Catholic ; and the priest will neither give him absolution or hear his confession.

I shall now take notice of a crime, which, in my opinion, is base, unnatural, and cruelly unjust ; in short, one of the worst of crimes ; for the sincerest repentance, even for the deed committed, can neither palliate the evil nor avert the injury. It is a most barbarous and sinful act, and the more so as it cannot be repaired. The crime I mean is that of living with a woman, having one or two children by her, and then marrying her perhaps even when she is some months gone, with child. What can any man say in favour of this wanton violation of justice ? and

what must be the feelings of the man who has committed it?—who, at the altar, legitimates one child in preference to the rest, and holds him up as an object of envy and hatred to the others;—who legalizes one by a ceremony instituted by priests, and bastardizes the others without any ceremony at all; though the whole of them are viewed by the Creator with the same parental eye. Were he but to reflect, as it becomes him, what pleasure can he enjoy, whilst before his eyes perpetually he views the lovely pledges of his former love, and the new-born bantling of the matrimonial state? Are they not all equally alike, blood of his blood, and flesh of his flesh? yet the latter minion of wedlock inherits the whole patrimony, and the others are turned out on the world beggars and bastards: for custom, prejudice,

and the law of man, but not the law of God, stamps them with that unjust, opprobrious appellation ; robs them of their birthright and their patrimony, and gives to the offspring of the same womb, but legitimated by a nuptial ceremony, the family titles and riches.

That self-same law, made by mankind and bigoted custom, stamps the chaste, lovely, and affectionate partner of my bed, with the unjust and cruel appellation of whore, because she has not undergone a ceremony instituted by man. By Heaven, I swear it is false ! The lie is base, subtle, and fraught with worldly craft and priestly insolence. No woman is an harlot but she who lets her body out to hire, to various and frequent comers. Be she but true to my bed, honest, and attentive to my interest, it is infamy superla-

tively vile, to brand her with a crime at which her honest and affectionate heart revolts. Will a ring put on one of the fingers make the blood flow purer in her veins? Will it, I ask, insure her chastity?—Tell me, ye who are bigots to matrimonial chains, that link two bodies until death, but cannot hold the two souls in unison, where lies the magic virtue of this ring? Has the Acteon race been less numerous since marriage has been made an ecclesiastical ceremony, or since polygamy was made a sin? I believe not; nay, I am convinced of the contrary: yet if I have children by a generous-hearted woman, without being married to her; though she is constant to my bed, good-tempered and affectionate, and devoutly interested in all my worldly happiness and welfare, those pledges of our tender love are doomed

to beggary, and bastardized:—a most cruel fate!

It is wicked in the extreme; for God has made no laws by which they are deemed bastards, or deprived of their inheritance. It is the law of man only which consigns them to disgrace and poverty. Speaking of bastardism, I shall state one more observation, then ask the reader a question, and conclude the subject.

A man and woman shall cohabit together, from pure mutual love and affection, unmarried by any ecclesiastical form, and shall have children: another man and woman shall be married in church by a priest. The woman, contrary to her inclinations, by the base and inhuman influence of her parents, or biassed by the



dazzling lustre of titles, and of sordid wealth, weds a man she abhors : the avaricious and inhuman parents view this man an Adonis and a Solomon, from his high birth and splendor ; though in his person he be more ugly and filthy than a baboon, and not many degrees removed from an idiot :—I must suppose further, that they both have children. I will now ask the reflecting liberal mind—Do the children of the former, or of the latter woman, merit most the appellation of bastards ?—I am of opinion, the latter : for it is allowed, by all sentimental philosophers, that the woman who marries without a proper friendship and affection for the man whom she weds, is but a prostitute licensed by the church. I have read of a curious ceremony amongst the Jews ; whether it exists now, I know not :—the parties go into the synagogue, each

attended by two priests, and having stated their objections to each other, the woman is asked if she be willing to part with her husband, and on her answering in the affirmative, *they spit in each other's face*; the man throws the bill of divorcement at his wife, and she receives it: upon which they jointly exclaim: "Cursed be they who shall wish to bring us together again!" This summary proceeding, whatever may be said of its elegance, is certainly a less tedious and expensive process than that presented to us by the existing laws of this country.

In the present times, a divorce cannot be procured for less than three or four hundred pounds; which the poor man cannot afford. A divorce, therefore, is positively not to be obtained by any but the rich. There is no way at present for

a poor man to get rid of his wife, but by cutting her throat or his own.

I have given enough of Scriptural authority; I will now offer that of the law. Jacob, in his Law Dictionary, writes, that before the time of Pope Innocent III. there was no solemnization of marriage in the church; but the man came to the house which the woman inhabited, and led her home to his own, which was all the ceremony then used.

Judge Blackstone goes further, at least he writes plainer, and tells you, without sneezing, that the intervention of a priest to solemnize the contract, is merely *juris positivi*, and NOT *juris naturalis aut divini*.

We are thus told, on the best authority, that, before Pope Innocent III.'s time, all the ceremony performed by the man was nothing more than fetching the bride from the place of her maiden residence to his own house.

I will now ask a question—a mode of proceeding, which, to use the expression of Mr. Burke, or Junius, or some other very clever writer, suits the mediocrity of my talents:—If a man prevails on a woman to quit her relations, and she comes and lives with him, under every promise of protection, would not such a woman, before Pope Innocent III's time, have been considered as his wife in every respect? Why then should she not possess the same privileges now, as under the Mosiac law, and in the earlier centuries of the Christian æra?

Besides, previous to the Popedom to which we have had occasion to refer, if a man had taken a young woman from her parents, and lived with her, he must have supported her for ever as his wife, though no ceremony had been performed according to canonical law. Let, therefore, any rational man reflect, and tell me whether in these days, taking a woman from her parents, and living with her, is not, in every sense, the same ceremony which in former days would have constituted a marriage both in the eyes of God and of man. But now, a man may seduce a dozen women, and desert them all in a state of pregnancy, without any apprehension, but from the overseers of as many parishes, which a few pounds to each will satisfy: and these poor women are all let loose, without character, without comfort, and without



friends; in short, without hope; to get their bread, not as they would, but as they may be suffered to do by the unfeeling rigour of the laws, and the harshness of what is called public decorum.

That the loveliest part of human nature should be thus infamously and basely deserted, and have no relief afforded them by the Legislature, is a disgrace to any Christian country. Yet thousands there are now walking the streets, deserted by ruffian man; who, by every artifice and solemn promise, even of marriage, have been tempted from their homes; and, after the infernal unfeeling monster has satisfied his brutal lust, have been turned adrift unprotected, unprovided for, and penniless, into a wide, and, in respect to fallen woman, a most uncharitable world.

I again repeat my opinion: if the law,

in this instance, were amended ; if every man were compelled to maintain the woman that he has seduced, and a permission were allowed, in certain situations, to marry a second wife during the life of the former ; in a few years we should not see a tenth part of those wretched, unfortunate, much to be pitied women, who are now prostituting themselves daily, to procure the necessaries of life. But of this I have spoken more fully in my Chapter on Female Ruin and Prostitution.

I shall now for a very short time quit England for Scotland ; which, however, I would never wish to do but for the sake of an argument ; and examine the custom and law respecting marriage, as well as the different treatment women receive in that country. Divided only by a river of a few yards in breadth, the law is infinitely

more liberal and just to the sex. According to my judgment, marriage is rational only in Scotland.

If a man in Scotland presents a woman into company as his wife, or calls her constantly by his name, she is received and respected as such, and the children also inherit : nay more, if a man lives with a woman only for one year and a day, this likewise constitutes a marriage, and the children will inherit, although in either of the above cases no ceremony has been performed by a priest : the woman is respected and treated as his wife. Whereas, in England, if a woman lives with a man, is true for years to his bed, is an affectionate help-mate through life, and a tender mother ; in short, let her possess every amiable accomplishment, and every mental virtue,

there are but very few who will associate with her. In the world she cannot be received ; and one-half of the modest women, as they are called, who perhaps are not very correct in their own conduct, whenever they meet her, turn up their noses ; while the vulgar part of the world, equally unjust, stamp her with the opprobrious, base, and false appellation of harlot.

I shall now conclude this subject, and request it may well be understood that I do not write in favour of promiscuous concubinage, or polygamy, as it is practised by the Mahometans ; neither am I averse to matrimony. I only state, that if the law were to permit man, in certain cases which I have mentioned, to marry a second wife, and also compel every man who should seduce a woman to

maintain or provide for the same as if she were his legal wife, in a very few years we should not see a tithe of those wretched, unfortunate women, who are now compelled to walk the streets to get their daily bread.

It may be asked—for some people are in the habits of putting strange questions—what interest have I in expatiating so fully and at such length on this subject? I reply, that I am actuated wholly and solely by a tender love, sincere affection, and honourable attachment to the dearest part of human nature—lovely woman.

The lives also of thousands of men would be ameliorated, were a regulated polygamy, in some instances, permitted, who now live in misery and wretchedness. I know many of them; and so



does my reader too : if he will but reflect for a moment, examples will crowd upon his recollection. Marriage is a good thing ; and so, is a bone for a dog ; but if you tie it to his tail, it will drive him mad. Society cannot be held together without *religion*, but it may without *priestcraft*.

---



---

*[By an error of the Press, the following pages were mislaid, and should have appeared in the foregoing Chapter, On Matrimony and Polygamy.]*

---

WHAT should hinder a woman betrothed to me from living as happily and conscientiously with me as one whose nuptials has been hallowed by an archbishop? I can never be brought to believe that a man will be considered as criminal in the eye of Heaven, in the year 1801, for treading in the very steps of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, of whom we read as received into heaven: nor will I even

subscribe my consent, in the smallest degree, to the want of chastity in the deed. Nay, I will go farther: Provided a man has never seduced and abandoned a woman to misery, a dozen wives, and twenty concubines, will not, in my judgment, bar the door of heaven against him. I speak only as to the absolute sinfulness of the act; it not being my intent to assert, that it may be prudent, under certain regulations of society, for a government to admit of them.

A stronger question still remains to be asked: Did Christ ever give any one away in marriage? I read of our Saviour being present at the marriage in Cana; but the only act of his which is recorded in Scripture at that meeting, was the miracle he wrought by turning the water into wine. Did his apostles marry? No.

Pope Clement began it ; and the priests since his time to the present days, jointly with the legislatures, have continued the custom, and endeavoured, as far as lies in their power, to attach disgrace to all betrothed love, truth, and constancy. One word more relative to Abraham :—He took unto him his handmaid Hagar. She was not even betrothed to him ; nor did her relations even consent, which was the ancient custom amongst the Jews. No. Sarah his wife, believing that she was too old to have a child, persuaded Abraham to take unto him Hagar, that she might obtain children by her ;—which are the words of the Scripture. Now, when the Lord promised to Sarah that she should have a son, after having for so long been barren, which son she bore unto Abraham and called his name Isaac, and she found that the son of the handmaid, Ha-



gar, (Ishmael,) found favour with Abraham in preference to her son, she grew jealous of Hagar and her child, and drove them both out of the house into the desert. Had Abraham and Sarah lived in these days, I will leave it to the judgment of the reader to determine on the conduct of Sarah, and what appellation would be given her ; but I will take on myself to determine that Abraham would be judged a fornicator, and Hagar an harlot, though God promised to Hagar, when in the wilderness, that he would cause a race to spring from the loins of her son that should not be numbered. If, however, I take another wife, because the woman I am already married to is so diseased or afflicted as to render it impossible to cohabit with her, I commit felony ; and if I live with a woman without the ceremony of marriage being performed by

a priest, although she is respected by my friends, and I am pledged to her in every sense, excepting the marriage ceremony, as if she were my legal wife ; the censorious part of the world will call me a libertine, and stamp that woman with the most degrading appellation ! She is as much my wife as if a bishop had blessed our nuptials at the altar, and a chorus of priests had chaunted an epithalamium of an hour long.

We will now take our leave of the Jews, and, which is no very unnatural transition, pass on to the Scotch,—who, though they certainly are not God's chosen people, contrive to squeeze themselves into the good things of this world, wherever they are to be found.

Let us now examine the customs of

Scotland, relative to marriage and legitimatizing children, &c. and then compare the laws of that country with this, relative to inheritance and marriages, when they will be found as distant as the north pole is from the south, though the countries are separated only by a few score yards of water called the river Tweed.

I will state two cases to any rational man who is not a slave to forms, and leave it to his reason to judge of them. If a man marries a woman pregnant by him, after she is eight months gone with child, or even a few hours only before the birth of the child, this offspring, being born in wedlock, is legitimated and inherits, and the woman is made his lawful wife. Another man takes unto him a woman, who has a child by him without being married: she is true to his

bed, and in every sense a tender parent and affectionate help-mate in life: but this child the law bastardizes, and does not permit it to inherit \*, and she is stamped with the most unjust and cruel denomination. It is the stigma thrown on woman by the censorious canting hypocrites of the age, which compels many a mother to murder the child of her womb, who otherwise might have become a tender and affectionate parent, lived to a mature age, and brought forth many children to the state, instead of being cut off in the flower of life by the hands of the executioner.

\* In Scotland, if a man has a child by a woman, and should some time afterwards marry her, the first child inherits, though she has more children after marriage. This custom in Scotland is founded in good sense, justice, honour and religion. I wish, with all my soul, it were the same in England.

The Ishmael of the Old Testament was favoured by Heaven; but the Ishmaels of the present age are bastardized by inhuman bigoted man, and cast out on the earth to seek for their bread by the sweat of their brow, or to be dependent on the charity of their relations; who, happening to be born in legal wedlock, inherit the very estate which they ought to have possessed by the wedlock of the same flesh and blood \*.

Thus, in opposition to the divine will and ordinance, do we form laws; and when we ask why such laws are suffered

\* With grief I relate, there are many gentlemen in this country, who are now living on a scanty pittance, who are begotten by their father out of a woman before wedlock, who afterwards has married that woman, and had children by her, who inherit not only very large estates, but titles also,



to exist, the answer made us is, that it is for the benefit of society. Can society be benefited in this instance, when any individual is injured in his dearest interests, his inheritance and his birth-right? Yet the magic words of a priest, sanctioned by the legislature, bastardizes and beggars the one, and raises the other to titles and estates, though they are both begotten of the same flesh and blood. Yet this is all done, we are told, for the benefit of society. Bigoted custom is as destructive to true happiness, as superstition is to true religion, and is justly called the silly daughter of a wise mother.

There is one consolation indeed, which remains to those of high rank, whose daughters may run away with a footman, or a groom, or some man of mean birth, (which many have done,) that if the foot-

man, &c. marries her, the act is holy and virtuous in the eyes of the world, and in no sense can the parent be affected but as to his pride.

The late divorce bill which passed the Upper House, has been the frequent theme of public discussion. I shall not take upon myself to judge of the propriety or impropriety of that bill : it has been discussed by the most able statesmen of the age. But had I had the honour of sitting in Parliament when that subject was on the carpet, I certainly should have taken the liberty of proposing to the legislature a method which, in my humble opinion, would render marriages more happy, and divorces less frequent. It is as follows : I would have a law enacted, that every young woman, previous to her intended marriage, should appear before some dig-

nified prelate, immediately after having undergone the solemn ceremony of taking the sacrament, and should be interrogated before the altar of her God, whether the man, her intended husband, was the object of her voluntary choice, and that by her free will and agreement she wished to be united to him, and that no threats or compulsion of parents had forced her to consent to the nuptials? Her avowal should be sufficient to permit a priest to unite such a couple: but on the contrary, I would have it made felony for a priest to officiate at a nuptial ceremony that was in any degree compulsory; parents then would be ashamed to use compulsion.

Marriages are in general made, either from a too hasty conclusion, before the parties can know each other well enough

to pass through life with happiness and peace of mind, or from a sordid thirst after wealth or aggrandizement. It is therefore with grief I reflect, that the two happiest days most married people enjoy with their wives, are the days that consign them to their wedding sheets and their winding sheets. Alas ! our passions are like our mistresses ; our reason like our wives. Yet in this country, man is so bigoted to matrimony, that some people even advertise for wives in the same manner as they would for an agreable partner in a post-chaise ; as if the journey through life was of no more consequence than a journey to York or Edinburgh. A man who has any regard for the safety of his limbs, would not take a raw horse out of a dealer's stable, pampered, set up, figged and gingered for sale, to carry him a long journey. If he did, it is an hundred to one, be-

fore he rode twenty miles, but the gentleman would get a fall. Nay, on setting out, the animal might prove so restive as not to be got beyond the stone's end.

I desire my intention may be well understood, for proposing this law relative to the solemn examination of damsels by a bishop, before he permits the performance of the marriage ceremony. It is not my wish to meddle either with the morality or religion of the country ; for the sake of society I bend to the laws of the state which protects me. For my morality or immorality I am accountable only to my God ; and whether any new law be enacted that shall cause the making one cuckold, or one hundred, more or less, in the year, is a matter of total indifference to me, as long as I am not implicated in such events. But it can-



not be a matter of indifference to me, or to any one who has the feelings of a man, to see a woman dragged to the altar and sacrificed to a person she detests; when, after exerting all her resolution, she at length finds it impossible to continue a life so wretched, and flies from it. Others, possessing greater resolution, remain in silent, wasting anguish, and drag along the tedious hours of life in misery and lamentation.

I have written much on the absolute necessity of man being permitted in certain cases, namely, disease and afflictions by the hand of God, to take unto him a second wife during the life of the former one. I repeat my reasons: it would not only be productive of happiness to the human race, and augment the population of the nation, but it would pre-

serve from ruin and misery many thousands of the loveliest and much to be pitied part of human nature. To this argument, a priest, or some over-pious Christian, might reply : Sir, would you wish to see God's holy word and ordinance perverted and abused, which the Lord, through our Saviour, has expressly commanded, "Those whom God has joined together let no man put asunder?" I would reply, By no means ; for I am of opinion, that when a woman is so diseased or afflicted as to render it impossible for a man to cohabit with her, if he provides for her wants in life, so as that she be enabled not only to live in comfort, but even in affluence, if her husband's fortune can afford it, I do not hold that he has put her away from him because he takes unto him another wife, from the circumstances already mentioned.

We will now examine this case and text in Scripture, in a worldly point of view, as well as in a religious one: "Those whom God has joined together let no man put asunder." I say, God forbid it should ever happen! but at the same time I will state that it is but just, first of all, before we condemn the act, to examine whether God did join them together or not. Happy are they who in unison of soul united, wishing to conform to the rules which govern society, (as it is termed,) proceed to church and submit to the nuptial ceremony. This may in truth be deemed a righteous and religious union, but no other can be so.

It would be profanation to assert the same in favour of those who are married from views of interest, be they what they may. Some women are, as it were, drag-

the altar by the compulsion of inhuman parents, and sacrificed to the man they detest. Can any man or woman, possessing honour, religion, or reflection, assert that such persons are joined together by the just and benevolent father of the creation ?

It is not to be expected that the hy-  
menial torch can ever burn pure and un-  
defiled, unless the flame is fanned by  
mutual love. As I am of opinion that  
many persons who will read this book,  
have never read the marriage ceremony,  
or the preamble to it, before the bands  
are performed, I will transcribe a pas-  
sage out of that ceremony, which the  
priest is commanded to repeat to the par-  
ties before he unites them. "I require  
and charge you both, as ye will answer  
at the dreadful day of judgment, when

the secrets of all hearts shall be disclosed, that if either of you knows any impediment why ye shall not be lawfully joined together in matrimony, ye do now confess it. For, be ye well assured, that so many as are coupled together otherwise than God's will doth allow, are not joined together by God, neither is their matrimony lawful.

Reader, I entreat you to ponder well the above words, solemnly pronounced before the altar of God by the priest to the parties intended to be coupled; remember also, that parents are usually present, who compulsively have forced their daughter, by inhuman influence and barbarous threats, to consent to wed the man she detests; too frequently also, knowing that her heart is not at her own disposal. Reader, ponder on those things.



I shall make but one comment on those words: That if a lawyer in Westminster-hall could produce as clear a flaw in any deed of conveyance, bond, &c. he would have very little trouble in setting it aside, and nullifying the contract. On this I shall say no more, but leave the above words, quoted from the marriage ceremony, to the reflection of those who are inclined to marriage; and especially to parents who have *female children*.

---



---

END OF VOL. I.

---



---



THE  
LIFE, ADVENTURES,  
AND  
OPINIONS  
OF  
COL. GEORGE HANGER.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

PRINTED BY WILSON & CO.  
ORIENTAL PRESS,  
Wild Court, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London.

THE  
LIFE, ADVENTURES,  
AND  
OPINIONS  
OF  
COL. GEORGE HANGER.

---

---

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

---

---

To which is added,

Advice to the Prelates and Legislators,  
how to correct the Immorality and  
Jacobinism of the present Age, and at  
the same time increase the Revenue.

Advice to the Lovely Cyprians, and to  
the Fair Sex in general, how to pass  
their Lives in future to their better  
Satisfaction, and to enjoy with Dis-  
cretion the three Cardinal Virtues.

On Matrimony, Compulsive Wedlock,  
and on Polygamy.

On the Misery of Female Prostitution.

The History of the Lovely Ægyptia,  
the Pamela of Norwood, and Paragon  
of the Ægyptian Race; the Author's  
Marriage with her, and her cruel In-  
fidelity and Elopement with a Tra-  
velling Tinker:

And a History of the King's Bench Pri-  
son, written by the Author during  
his Custody under the Marshal of that  
Prison, descriptive of the Miseries en-  
dured by the Prisoners, and the ex-  
travagant Expence incident to their  
Confinement.

---

---

Insanire parat, certa ratione modoque—  
Nudus agris, nudus nummis.

---

---

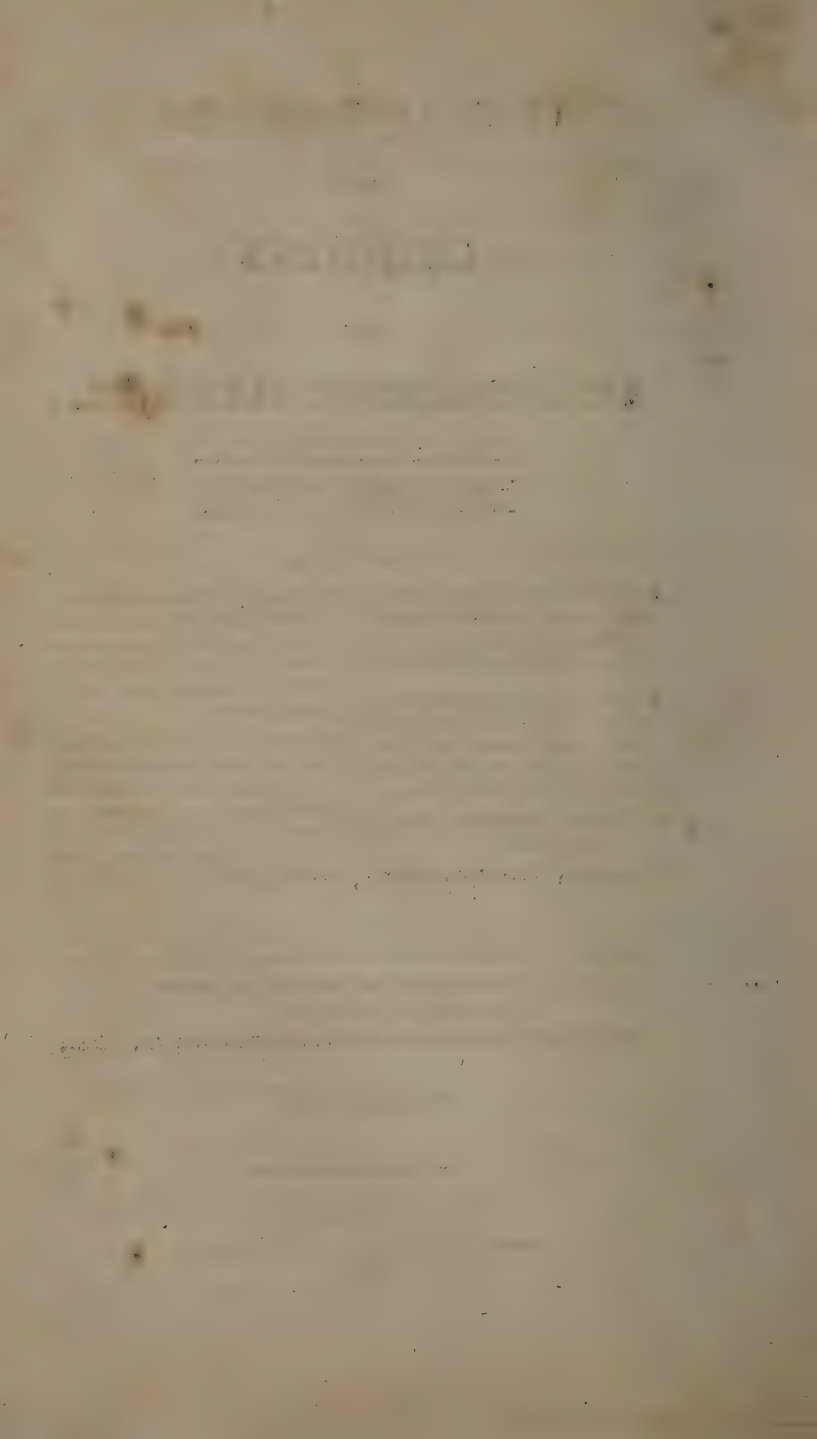
HORAT.

VOL. II.

---

LONDON,  
PRINTED FOR J. DEBRET, PICCADILLY.  
1801.





THE  
LIFE, ADVENTURES,  
AND  
OPINIONS  
OF  
COL. GEORGE HANGER.

---

ON my return to England I immediately joined my regiment, the first regiment of guards, in which I was an ensign. I may, with truth, say, that I knew my duty better than nine ensigns in ten, at their debut on the parade at Whitehall; for I not only was acquainted with the common parade-duty, but absolutely

knew the manœuvre of a battalion ; for I had made my profession my study, and was devoutly attached to a military life.

I was almost instantly launched into the great world, and introduced into the most distinguished companies in this country. When first I trod the paths of pleasure in this gay town, my country was arrived at the very height of national grandeur, and was not as yet on the decline. She was powerful, and respected all over the world ; both her fleets and armies were victorious wherever they went ; the country was rich, from many years' peace, after a glorious seven years' war. It was then that Great Britain, in the hour of her insolence \*, drew the jea-

\* Vide Governor Johnson's speech on the American war.

lousy and vengeance of the European powers. There was abundance in every part : the necessaries of life were at a moderate price ; the people were happy, joyful, and contented : the middle man then lived well ; the nobility and gentlemen were in general in a state of opulence ; and there was scarcely such a thing to be seen in the land as a poor gentleman. England then basked in the sunshine, from the vigorous and successful measures of the great Mr. Pitt, who wielded the democracy of England in one hand, and smote the House of Bourbon with the other. He guided the affairs of this country in war with manly vigour, and in negociation with sincerity, ever scorning those political refinements of which others vainly boast : sincerity he ever took for his guide, and his country's honour for his glory : his fame did not

consist in triumphing, in a speech of four hours, over a fallen foe, in the senate, but in victory over a foreign enemy : he was dreaded abroad, and loved at home. The magnificence, elegance, splendour, and extravagance of the times cannot be described. To frequent the polite circles in those days, a young man must have been polite, well bred, well educated, and well dressed : they seldom came into the world till one-and-twenty, and not till they had travelled, or been in some foreign country, for a couple of years at least. It is of the greatest utility for a young man to be absent in a foreign country for a considerable time. Abroad, he must behave well, and be polite in company, or he will have half-a-dozen swords through his body in a week, which will soon teach him good breeding, better than any thing else I am ac-



quainted with. In these days, young men are thrown into the world between fourteen and fifteen years of age, from Eton or Westminster school, with their mind and manners equally unformed. A young man may now come in to a lady's assembly or ball-room, head or tail foremost, in a trot, a walk, or a canter—it is all the same; and if he behave ever so rude, it is only looked upon as a levity of youth. If a gentleman in these days has but a few guineas in his purse, and will walk directly up to the Faro-table, he will be the most welcome guest in the house: it is not necessary for him to speak, or even bow, to a single lady in the room, unless some unfortunate woman at the gaming-table ask him politely for the loan of a few guineas: then his answer need be but short—"No, Dolly, no; can't;" for this ever will be received

as wit, though the unfortunate lady's bosom may be heaving, not from the tenderer passions, but with grief and despair at having lost the last farthing.

When I first came into the world there was no such thing as a Faro-table admitted into the house of a woman of fashion: in those days they had too much pride to receive tribute \* from the proprietor of such a machine. In former times there was no such thing in all London as gaming at a private house, although there was more deep play at the clubs at that time than ever was before or has been since. It is lamentable to see lovely woman destroying her health and beauty at six o'clock in the morning at a gaming-table. Can

\* In some houses, in this age, the lady of the house is paid fifty guineas each night by the proprietor of the Faro-table.

any woman expect to give to her husband a vigorous and healthy offspring, whose mind, night after night, is thus distracted, and whose body is relaxed by anxiety and the fatigue of late hours? It is impossible. Besides, there is a greater evil attendant on such practices. Gaming and liquor have debauched more women than all the solicitations of the whole race of man. To appear in company, it was necessary to be full-dressed: no person wore a frock in the evening; a dress-coat, bag, and sword was constantly worn even at the playhouse; and no gentleman ever attempted to go into the side-boxes in boots. There were no impertinent box-lobby loungers in those days, to insult women as they pass, and disturb the performance. Every man then, though not full-dressed, but only

in a plain frock, wore a sword. I have seen one or two impertinent fellows drawn upon immediately, and stuck up against the box-door. Now, every barber dresses as well as a gentleman: and cards of address, every night almost, are reciprocally exchanged at the playhouse between the apprentices of a muslin-seller and a man-milliner, who all wear cockades, and pass for officers.—As for myself, I was extremely extravagant in my dress. For one winter's dress-clothes only, it cost me nine hundred pounds. This extravagance is likely to astonish the reader: but what, in my opinion, should strike him with more wonder, is, that I absolutely paid the tailor: this expence was only for dress-suits. I employed other tailors to furnish servants' clothes, and morning and hunting frocks, &c. for myself.

I was always handsomely dressed at every birth-day: but for one in particular I put myself to a very great expence, having two suits for that day. My morning vestments cost me near eighty pounds, and those for the ball above one hundred and eighty. It was a satin coat *brodé en plain et sur les coutures*; and the first satin coat that had ever made its appearance in this country. Shortly after, satin-dress clothes became common amongst well-dressed men. Great officers of state are in honour compelled to appear in a handsome suit of clothes at the birth-day of their king: it is but a small part of that gratitude and duty they owe to their sovereign, for the dignified situations he has given them, to attend on his person. I had no office of emolument, advantage, or trust about his Majesty's person, excepting an ensigncy in the first



regiment of foot-guards, the emoluments of which did not then amount to four shillings per day ; which daily pay would not have paid my tailor his charges of one single button and button-hole to my gala suit \*. I was of opinion that I could not pay my sovereign greater respect than by appearing elegantly and expensively dressed at the birth-day ; and I trust his Majesty thought well of it. As silence gives consent, I am entitled to put a favourable construction on it ; for, from the very moment I came into the guards as ensign, to the day I went to the American war, and to this hour, after having served my king and country faithfully for seven

\* Did I say a button and button-hole ? The very stitching of a button-hole in those days cost me more : and the embroidered gold-clocks to my stockings, with which I never failed to appear at a ball or gala-day, cost me a much larger sum.

long years, I never have been honoured with one word from his Majesty's lips.

I never was fond of cards or dice, nor ever played for any considerable sum of money; at least, no further than the fashion of the times compelled me. I claim, however, no merit whatever for abstaining from play, as it afforded me no pleasure: if it had, I certainly should have gratified that passion, as I have done some others. But the turf I was passionately fond of, and indulged that pleasure to a very great extent. I once stood three thousand guineas on one race, Shark against Leviathan, and won it: my confederate, Mr. Robert Pigott, stood five thousand on the event. I was a considerable gainer by the turf, notwithstanding the enormous expence of keeping running-horses in those days; as every

horse in training, at Newmarket, cost the owner between eighty and ninety pounds a-year, if not moved from that place; but if he travelled the country, it was computed, to clear himself, he must win three fifty-pound plates during the summer. To use the idea, but not the precise words, of Macheath, I can, with truth, say, the turf has done me justice: but the extravagance of the times, the delightful pleasures of that age, and the frailty of my own nature, were my ruin. I must have been more than man, or, more properly speaking, less than man, not to have indulged in the pleasures of the gay world, which I could not partake of without being at a very considerable expence; by far more than my income could afford. As my estate, together with a house furnished, which, with some acres of land, I let to the best of

tenants, Mrs. Crewe, the grandmother to my worthy friend Colonel Crewe, the young man, I mean, who was wounded in the expedition to the Helder, for two hundred a-year, did not exceed eleven hundred pounds. This was all I was possessed of, excepting about three thousand pounds in cash as a younger child's fortune.

Speaking of Captain Macheath, it reminds me of a story which has been told in various shapes, respecting an interview I once had in Newgate, with a very honourable and brave fellow, Hawkes, the flying highwayman. Honourable and brave did I say?—Yes; I repeat it; nay more, he was humane and charitable: and the following circumstances will, in the mind of every liberal individual, prove him to have been so. He had a famous mare, which he had oftentimes

rode very long distances in a short space of time. I had oftentimes seen him at Newmarket, where he attended the races as a bettor. In those days I was so fond of riding my own hacknies on the road in a journey, that whenever I went any distance, I used to send my servant in my chaise with my clothes, and relay my own hacknies. I had four or five of the speediest and safest that I believe the country could produce. Accordingly, when Hawkes was committed to Newgate, I thought his mare would have been a great acquisition. Returning from Newmarket to London, after a very wet and dirty ride, very much in dishabille, being in dirty boots, surtout coat and round hat, which no gentleman in those days wore in London even in boots: In short, just as I was when I dismounted from my horse, I went to Newgate, and desired to see Mr. Hawkes,

but without telling the turnkey who I was. The turnkey called him out to the tap-room, and I heard him tell him that an acquaintance wanted to speak to him. After calling for a bottle of wine and condoling with him on his situation, I entered on my business with him, telling him I knew he had a famous mare, and that I wished much to buy her. "The mare," says he, "is a good mare still, though she has done a good deal of work ; and, moreover, is as fast a one as I ever crossed." "Pray, Mr. Hawkes, what is the greatest distance, in point of expedition, you ever rode her?" "Why, Sir, the longest ground, in a short time, that she ever carried me, was one evening, when, after *doing a little business* near Salt Hill, I rode her within the hour to London." "She must be very speedy, indeed," I replied ; and no more was said



about the mare's performances. I then made him a present of two or three guineas, and told him, that as the mare was to be sold for the benefit of the captors, I hoped he would not deceive me, but tell me frankly whether he would recommend me to buy her or not. "Sir," answered he, "it is not likely that a man so near his latter end as I am, (for there is hardly any chance of my escaping,) should deceive any one; therefore, Sir, pray tell me, for what purpose do you want her? I replied, For *the road*, and *only* for the road. "Then, Sir, I will fairly tell you that I recommend you not to purchase her, for I do not think she will suit you; as *it was with the greatest difficulty I could ever get her up to a carriage.*

This brave and charitable fellow one day riding near Uxbridge, well dressed

and well mounted, met an industrious labourer, who stopped him, and said, "Gentleman, don't ride that way, as there are two foot-pads gone up that lane who have just robbed me." "What have you lost," says Hawkes. "Ten or twelve shillings," replied the man; "all I have earned by hard labour to support a wife and family during a week." "Take this pistol, then, in your hand," said Hawkes, "and get up behind me, and shew me the man who robbed you." The countryman accordingly sprang up behind him, and they soon overtook the foot-pads: they then dismounted, and Hawkes, after asking them if they were not ashamed to rob a poor labourer, knocked one down, whilst the countryman seized the other: he took every thing from them, beat them soundly, and gave the spoils to the countryman. He then mounted his horse, and

rode off, telling the grateful and astonished rustic to remember the flying highwayman.

This singular character lived, some years before he was suspected of highway robbery, near Uxbridge, and was so charitable to the poor people around him, that they most sincerely lamented his condemnation and exit.

I shall beg leave to mention a very singular and gallant action of this extraordinary man. After robbing three or four stage-coaches, before break of day, in the neighbourhood of London, he stopped one in which was a lieutenant of a man-of-war. The lieutenant presented a long horse-pistol at Hawkes, and told him to stand off, or that he would shoot him. Hawkes said he was determined to

rob the coach. The lieutenant replied, I have got but a small sum of money, which I do not know how to replace; and I am resolved that you shall not have it." " Then, said Hawkes, " get out of the coach; I don't want to take a small pittance from a poor officer, who has earned it hardly in his country's service: but mind you, Sir, I will most assuredly rob this coach, and I shall advance immediately: therefore, be sure you take good aim, so as to be certain of killing me; for, on my honour, I shall not fire till my pistol touches your head." The lieutenant accordingly got out of the coach, and Hawkes robbed the other passengers; when he rode off, and wished the lieutenant a good morning. This brave man was not like the ruffians of the present age, who fire into carriages before they know whether the

persons in it are armed or not, or intend to make any resistance. Let even a woman be in the carriage, they pay no distinction to the delicacy of the female sex. The inhuman murder of that amiable young man, Mr. Mellish, strikes me with horror, when I reflect that an Englishman could be guilty of so cowardly an action. When they stopped him, and told him to throw his arms out of the window, he assured them that he had no arms; that he was returning from hunting, and that they might with safety advance and take his money. But after robbing him, without the smallest resistance on his part, the inhuman monsters fired into the chaise and killed him. One would hardly think, that, in a brave nation, such a cowardly miscreant could be found. I do not judge of the country at large from the instance of one ruffian, but I am in-

clined to think, from many circumstances I could mention, that we are degenerating very fast.

Now I shall speak to the honour and honesty of this brave fellow, Hawkes. In fact, I took a particular liking to this man, made myself known to him, and used to go see him at least three times a-week, until he was executed. I assured him, that there was nothing in my power that I would not do to save his life ; and actually entered into a plan with him for his safety, requesting he would point out any means by which he might be preserved. “ There is nothing but money, Sir,” said he, “ can save me ; but that I have not ; and even if I had it, I fear it is now too late ; for the person I robbed is bound over to prosecute me at the ensuing sessions. I immediately put



a fifty-pound note in his hand, asking him if that was sufficient for the purpose? He threw himself on his knees, and blessed me an hundred times :—" Oh, dear Sir, had I known you when first confined, and before I was committed to take my trial, you could have saved my life ; however, I will try what can be done, and be assured, Sir, I will not make an improper or dishonest use of your money. A few days afterwards, sitting at breakfast, my servant told me that a woman wanted to speak to me : I ordered her to be shewn up ; and who should this be but the wife of Hawkes, who came with her husband's best gratitude and respects to me, and returned me the fifty-pound note, informing me that he had tried every means to no purpose, and that—die he must.

Let those experienced gamesters who have made a young man of fortune drunk purposely to win his money, who have clogged a die, and packed the cards, to the utter ruin not only of the suffering individual, but to the beggary of his family, who stalk this town in all the pride of spoliating infamy ; let them, I say, examine their own consciences, if they have any, and decide who merits the gallows most—they or Hawkes ?

I went constantly to see this brave fellow in Newgate, till the day of his execution ; when I placed myself on horseback close to the tail of the cart. Just before he was turned off, prayers being ended, he fixed his eyes on me, smiled, nodded his head to me, and then looking up to heaven, I am confident from the signs he made to me that he prayed to

God, before whom he was shortly to appear, to bless me for my intended kindness; then, not waiting for the driving on of the cart, with a manly exertion, he sprang out of it, which launched him sooner into eternity!—Reader, what thinkest thou of this highwayman? I will tell my opinion of him: I would rather have had the prayers of this man, than of all the church-going hypocrites of the age, or any sanctified methodist who reads prayers in his own family twice a day\*.

There are other two interesting stories of highwaymen, which I shall venture to re-

\* A methodist who kept a huxter's shop, when a great variety of articles were sold, was heard to say to his shopman, "John, have you watered the rum?" "Yes." "Have you sanded the brown sugar?" "Yes." "Have you wetted the tobacco?" "Yes." "Then come in to prayers."

late. A great many years ago, there lived in Ireland, an officer, a Colonel Coningham, who, for what reason I know not, had been outlawed, and a reward of two thousand pounds offered by Government to any person who would bring him a prisoner to Dublin: he was so beloved in his own country, that no soul would lay hands on him, and the officers of justice knew him to be so determined and truly brave, that it would cost two or three of them their lives to take him. After a considerable time living in this disagreeable manner, he resolved to go to Dublin, surrender himself, and take his trial. Not many miles from Dublin, he was stopped by a highwayman, a very young man, and of genteel appearance; when Col. Coningham asked him if he knew who it was he had stopped? and on the young man answering in the negative,

“ Then,” replied the Colonel, “ I will tell you ; I am the very Col. Coningham for whose person a reward of two thousand pounds is offered, and whom the officers of justice know never will be taken alive by force ; you cannot, therefore, think that a single highwayman can intimidate me : you have a very young appearance, and cannot long have made this business a practice : tell me, therefore, your situation, and if you are in real want, I will relieve you ; but rob me you shall not.” The young man replied, “ I solemnly declare, Sir, that I never was guilty of such an action before ; for I am really a gentleman of good family, but at this time in the most abject distress.” The Colonel, struck with compassion and pity, from seeing a man of his condition driven to such a fatal remedy for his wants, said to him, “ Young man, dismount ; give your horse to my postilion,



and come into the chaise ; then disarm me, tie my hands fast, and, having surrendered me at the castle, claim the two thousand pounds reward offered to any one who shall apprehend me." The Colonel and the young man accordingly journeyed on to Dublin, when he surrendered the Colonel safe into custody, and received the whole of the reward. Thus the gallant Coningham acted decidedly, though as determined a man as ever stepped in leathern shoe, because he saw a gentleman in distress. A gentleman in these days, *if he is not in Parliament*, provided he surrenders to the King's Bench for various debts, amounting in all to *two or ten* thousand pounds ; if he gives up all his property, and pays 1990*l.* or 9990*l.* may be confined for the remaining *ten* pounds all his life by an obdurate creditor ; when a vender of cabbages may, by obtaining a certificate of



bankruptcy, never be imprisoned, and set up in the same trade again.

My last history of highwaymen is that of the famous Morgan, whose name stands with distinguished fame on the Bow-street Journals.

Morgan had dogged a Colonel Manley out of town, on purpose to rob him, knowing that at all times he was used to carry a considerable sum of money about his person, especially on his journey to Bath, where he was accustomed to play very deep. Colonel Manley was well known to be a man of great personal courage, and, happening to leave town very late, stopped to dine at one of the inns in Hounslow. Morgan, growing impatient, wrote the Colonel a letter, and sent it by a returned chaise to the house

where he dined, informing him of his name and profession, with the assurance that he was without any accomplice, and waiting on the heath to rob him ; the Colonel, taking no notice of this to the landlord, or any one else, as a brave man accepted the challenge. He had but one brace of pistols with him, which he discharged at Morgan without effect ; when Morgan, putting his pistol in his pocket, advanced to the chaise, and said, “ Colonel, besides the gold you have in your purse, I know you have five hundred pounds in bank-notes in your pocket-book, as I can tell you at what banker’s you received that sum this morning : I will act generously and liberally by you ; therefore, without demur, give me your pocket-book.” Col. Manley, astonished both at the gallantry and generous conduct of the highwayman, gave him his pocket-book. Morgan

returned him 250l. and wished him a good evening. We do not in general meet with such civil highwaymen; especially in these days, I am sorry to say, that they seem to be bent as much on murder, as to relieve their wants. I myself did not experience, a few years past, any marks of civilities from one of these gentlemen, who stopped my chaise near Gunesbury-lane; for he fired directly in my face, and his pistol was not three feet from my head: but I do not complain; for I confess I was not over ceremonious with him, as luckily I fired first and hit him, which I have reason to suppose rather deranged him, and prevented his taking any effectual aim at me.

It would have been more regular in me not to have omitted some things relative to the genealogy of my parents, in the early

part of my narrative ; but I never claimed any merit to myself for regularity, in any sense of the word. I therefore trust the generous reader will accept it as well in this page as in any former one.

I am informed, that some relations of our family have declared, that our family were formerly possessors of a very ancient domain and mansion-house in the county of Middlesex, called Bruce Castle, and that from thence we first sprung. All I can say is, that I never heard my father or mother speak of such a place; and I have heard them relate many singular and interesting anecdotes of my ancestors. One in particular I remember well, that the very gentleman, I forget his name, who sold the estate at Dryfield in Gloucestershire, which is now in the possession of our family, to my grandfa-

ther, came to the very door of that house, formerly his own, and asked alms. All I know of the genealogy of my ancestors, (of which I am not in the smallest degree vain, it being a matter of total indifference to me what they were, and from whom or what they sprung,) I will now relate, and I believe it will be found tolerably correct.

My grandfather was Sir George Hanger, Bart. How he acquired the title I know not. I never heard my father say that his father inherited the title; or who my grandfather's father was, or of what profession or of what calling; which, indeed, is perfectly indifferent to me, and not to the present question. My grandfather and grandmother, for ought I know, and, what is more, for ought I care, might have been as obscure in their origin, as the parents



of the beautiful Sally, born in our alley, as the song relates ; and have followed the same means for their livelihood\*. But to the point. Sir George Hanger had five or six sons, I forget which, and three daughters : John the eldest of course remained at home, as the young squire always does ; the others were dispersed all over the world : one was a Russia merchant ; another a Turkey merchant, and settled at Smyrna ; and the fourth was in a merchant's house in the city. My father, the youngest, went to India ; and, with more grief than it is possible for me to express, I have often heard him declare, that his father gave him no more than five hundred pounds to begin

\* “ Her father he made cabbage nets,  
 “ About the streets he cried them ;  
 “ Her mother she made laces long,  
 “ For those that chose to buy them.”

&c. &c. &c.



the world with, as I thought it savoured much of teaching me prudence and economy.

Now to the female part of our family. One of my aunts was married to a gentleman, by name *Lecuse*; I may not be correct in spelling his name, but so it was pronounced. Another, who left me my estate in Berkshire, of whom I shall speak in another part of this book, was married to Hare, Lord Coleraine, an Irish nobleman, of great property both in Ireland and in this country. The chief part of his estates in England was in Hertfordshire. Now, generous reader, I have endeavoured to give as faithful and true an account of my family as I am enabled to do, but I cannot trace them further than to my grandfather; and whether those who went before them sold cabbage nets

and made laces long, and cried their honest labour about the streets, is a matter of perfect indifference to me.

My father, after an absence of ten years, returned to England for the benefit of his health; and I have heard him often say, that he was not then worth more than twenty-five thousand pounds. Shortly after his arrival, one of his brothers died and left him his property, which was sufficient to enable him to live in this country, and put an end to his design of returning to India. However, to bring the good fortune of my father to a speedy conclusion; his four brothers died, all without issue, in a very few years after his arrival, and bequeathed him all their wealth to a very considerable amount. His two married sisters died without issue, and both left him something; the one, Lady Coleraine, as I

have observed before, bequeathed to me my estate in Berkshire. My aunt Jane, who resided at Bath, died in virgin purity, never having been married, and left all she possessed to my father. Thus did Fortune turn her wheel in his favour, who had but five hundred pounds to begin the world with, that she brought him, by the death and good will of his relations, to great affluence and riches: a most fortunate event for his three sons\*, who were curiously endowed by nature to spend it.

Speaking of my family, it may be as well to mention here as in any other part of this Work, by what means my

\* “ Three pretty boys did Gabriel get,

“ The youngest George by name, Sir,

“ A funny dog, not favoured much

“ By fortune or by fame, Sir.”

father was made Lord Coleraine in the kingdom of Ireland.

His sister, Miss Anne Hanger, as I have already observed, was married to Hare, Lord Coleraine. But my father was not in the most distant degree related to him, except by marriage. Hare, Lord Coleraine, however, dying without issue, or heir to the title ; my father, Gabriel Hanger, claimed it, with just as much right as the clerk or sexton of the parish. After the same manner as Jupiter overcame the beautiful Danae, did he prove an undoubted right to the title, and was created a peer of Ireland. A lady of high rank, and of no inconsiderable influence in the days of that excellent king, George the Second, is supposed to have been benefited very

considerably by one of these glistening showers.

If a nobleman could bequeath his virtues, his abilities, and courage to his posterity, the same as he can will his lands and property, then a noble descent would be very valuable. By intermarrying with the children of Howe, Duncan, St. Vincent, and Nelson, we might insure a race of heroes to the State: but, alas! how many great men, who died in the last century, would be shocked if they could but look out of the grave and view those to whom their titles are descended. As for the reversionary chance that, in the wheel of fortune, I may have to the title in our family, I am willing to dispose of it at a very cheap rate to any vain man who seeks for empty honours; for, if titles are

not bestowed as a reward of merit, they are of no value in my estimation. The King can give titles, but he cannot bestow virtue, abilities, or courage.

I had not been above two years in England when I was engaged in a most singular adventure,—the very thought of which, to this moment, fills me with alarm. It was very much the fashion in those days to walk on Sunday evenings, during the summer, in Kensington-gardens. They were much crowded, and frequented by well-dressed persons of all ranks and descriptions. A particular friend of mine came to me in the morning, and desired that I would be in the garden that evening, as he had something particular to mention to me, which he would impart when we met. I was there to my appointment, and joined him on the prome-



nade. He then told me, his reason for asking me to accompany him was that he was anxious to have some conversation with a lady who would be in company with a female friend, whose attention to what might pass between them he wished me to divert by my attention to her. We did not join them till near dusk, when, drawing off from the public walk, we passed to that part of the garden near to the palace, where formerly, before the gardens were cleared of the underwood, many of the walks were bordered with very thick and high yew-hedges, which, from the trees and shrubbery behind them, were rendered impervious to the view. It was almost dark, the night being much overcast. We were sitting on one of the garden-seats, when, at some distance, we saw a man coming down the gravel-walk. The women proposed getting up, and re-

tiring by one of the small passages between the yew-hedges into the shrubbery, lest the person approaching us might know them. It was now half past nine at night; and my friend and the two ladies retired into the shrubbery. I stood before the opening of the yew-hedge, as this man came opposite to me on the gravel-walk; and when he was about six or seven paces from me, he made a dead halt, and faced about towards me. I spoke not a word for at least two or three minutes, while he kept walking a few paces backwards and forwards viewing me, and seeming as if he wished to see what was behind me. At length, quitting the centre of the gravel-walk, he advanced two or three paces nearer to me. It was then high time for me to decide what I should do. But, before I proceed, it is necessary to men-

tion, that very imprudently I had put my glove in my mouth to disguise my voice ; for, had I spoke to him in my natural tone, on perceiving that I could not be the person he sought after, he might have gone away. On his advancing, I again said, “ Sir, you cannot pass this way.” Upon which he immediately put his hand to his sword : nor did I delay to draw mine, when I retired within the narrow passage of the hedge, to make sure, if he was determined to force an entry, that I should have the advantage of parrying any thrust from him, when he could not prevent my acting against him. He immediately advanced close to the hedge, with his sword half through it ; at the same time grumbling inwardly, and absolutely snorting and blowing with anger. I could have run him through the body, with the greatest facility, in the disadvan-

tageous situation in which he was; but, instead of acting, I said, “ For God’s sake, Sir, do not advance! you cannot want any thing of me; it is impossible that I should be the person you are looking for : but I swear, if you advance one step further, I will kill you !” At this moment my friend came up on one side of me, and, in a low voice, said, “ My dear George, for God’s sake don’t kill him !” In those days I was in great habits of fencing, having a person to attend me three times a-week to perfect me in that science. Being very strong in the arm and wrist, I was ever prepossessed with an idea, that if I could, unobserved, change from the one side of my adversary’s blade to the other, and beat on it, I should be certain of hitting the very best fencer. This was a favourite *coup* of mine; and I now put it in practice

with such velocity, force, and success, that if it had not been for the hedge into which I drove his sword, and in which it was for a moment entangled, I believe sincerely that I should have forced the sword out of his hand. At the instant I beat upon his blade, I made a gentle bott at him, slightly opposing my sword to his body, and just pricked him, at which he started back a couple of paces. I never advanced, but kept my position within the hedge, knowing that, from the advantage of it, I could do any thing with him I chose ; and, had he advanced again, I was resolved not to attempt to run him through the body, but to gather his blade, and attempt to disarm him. Notwithstanding my having made him lightly feel the point of my sword, he never spoke one word, but stood snorting and puffing with rage. I then said, “ Sir, for God’s



sake, go away ! I do not wish to hurt you : you must be conscious that I could have run you through the body if I had been so disposed : let me, therefore, entreat you to go away. I know you not ; nor can you want any thing of me, or of any person with me ;” for really and truly I did not know him ; nor did I ever after, with any degree of certainty ; yet, from his figure, size, and walk, I had my suspicions who he was, as well as from his being very shy of me when I attempted some time afterwards to be acquainted with him. The story was buzzed about the town that I had been engaged in a rencontre in the dark with an unknown person in Kensington gardens, to protect two ladies and a gentleman from being discovered by him. Thus the story was told, and no person ever was acquainted with any further particulars of this affair ; which may



be thought singular, as two women were parties to the transaction \*. They were certainly sworn to secrecy for their own interest : my friend never entrusted it to any person ; and I never have, nor ever will, so help me God ! Nor should I ever have written this, were not my friend and one of the ladies in their graves. What is most singular, the women had discretion and art sufficient to put this story about as if they themselves had never been concerned in it ; and it was the most sensible method they could adopt. As I could not be suspected of any intimacy

\* I know it is generally the opinion, that women cannot keep a secret, and are not to be trusted. A base woman, or a weak one, is not to be trusted ; no more is a silly fellow, or an infamous scoundrel. But we undervalue women by far too much : if you possess the good opinion and friendship of a sensible and honest woman, you may trust her as safely as a man of integrity.

with them; for I never had spoke twice in my life to either before that night, nor very seldom after: they, of course, never mentioned my friend's name, and made it a matter of wonder who he could be.—To return to my antagonist in the gravel-walk :—At my solicitations and entreaties he put up his sword, and walked back the same way he came. I watched him out of sight; but, it may be well credited, I did not follow him. Judge, reader, what pleasure I must have felt when he was gone! Reflect only on my horrid situation! Had I killed this man, one half at least of the censorious world would have believed that my friend and me had assassinated him. If he had killed me, the consequences must have been very disagreeable to all parties: the women and my friend, at all events, must have come forward. During

the conflict, which lasted a considerable time, I dare say above five minutes, a thousand horrors and fears rushed into my mind, and unstrung my soul. As to the matter of a duel, had it been in daylight, with a second, I should not have thought more than others on such an occasion, having fought three duels before I was twenty years old; since which time, I assure the reader, that I have been as peaceably inclined as my neighbours, and in no way whatever disposed to quarrels:—indeed I am not of a quarrelsome temper. I solemnly declare I was so dismayed, that, if it had not been for discovering the women, and had I been waiting there alone expecting to meet some kind fair one, I should have taken to my heels and run away as fast as my legs would have carried me. I have certainly been in some disagreeable situations in life

since that period, but never, in my days, have I been so alarmed: it is not possible for me to describe what I suffered.—To end this narrative: My carriage was waiting at the palace-gate, and we walked down to the gardener's house, and prevailed on him to let us out, for it was then past ten. We put the women into the carriage, who were set down in London, not at their own house, as may be well imagined; and my friend and I walked home, rejoicing on having escaped so well out of so ticklish a situation.

Having already mentioned the extravagance and excesses of the nobility and private gentlemen at the west end of the town, it will be but fair, in return, to take a view of the honest merchant and citizen at the east end. The first question he asks his friend, when he rises in

the morning, is, "How are stocks?"—"Very flat, indeed."—"How is omnium?"—"Much the same as yesterday."—"My dear friend, Is there no hopes of sugars rising? I bought up a great quantity in the market, and have them now on hand."—"None whatever: there has been no hurricane in the West Indies this season, and the crops were abundant."—"That, my friend, is very unfortunate: and, above all, there is no hopes now of the enemy capturing the homeward-bound West-India fleet, from the great superiority we have at sea: formerly, and in other wars, we speculators had some chance, even when the market was glutted with sugars, or any other article of trade, to sell them to some advantage, or at least not lose by them, when the product lay but in few hands: however, I am determined to stand my chance, for



I won't sell at the present indifferent price; and, as I bought them two *per cent.* cheaper than they now are, I can't be a great loser."—"Pray, my friend, have you heard how provisions are; are they likely to be cheaper?"—"I am afraid not, for bread will rise two assizes next Thursday; and meat, cheese, and bacon are extremely dear also."—"Why, then, on Thursday bread will be eighteen pence the quartern loaf. My God! how can the poor live if the farmers and cornfactors are permitted to hoard up the grain \*?" There being no demand for rum or sugars, and stocks being very flat, nothing is to be done that day in the Alley: he, therefore, goes to the coffee-house to hear the news; when, taking up a

\* This is the public cant the honest merchant holds, at the same time he has 100,000 l. of rum and sugars in his stores, purchased on speculation to sell again.



paper, he reads—Yesterday, Lord A—— lost seven thousand pounds at Hazard, at Miles's Club, St. James's Street ; and Mr. B. five thousand pounds, the same night, at Brooks's. Turning to an acquaintance near him, he exclaims, “ Good God ! Sir, how shocking is the passion that some men have for play ! The extravagance, vice, and profligacy of the men of fashion of the present age, and beyond all belief, not only distressing themselves by play, but reducing their wives and families to beggary ! It is horrid indeed, Sir ! ” — “ and will not bear reflection,” replies his neighbour. Now this very man, not a fortnight before, at the last settling day, gained ten thousand pounds by speculating in the Alley. But this is not all the honest citizen does : if he did no worse than speculate with his own money, he would be the only sufferer, and surely might rea-

dily be forgiven, and even pitied if unfortunate. But, what monsters in wickedness have we witnessed amongst these honest citizens, by involving whole families of industrious people, who have entrusted them with their little all, the savings of many years' labour, in their own ruin ! then, not daring to live, they seek the refuge that is to be found in suicide.

One monster in atrocity, superlatively nefarious, exceeding by far all other culprits, and who has comprehended a far greater number of individuals in his ruin than we have before heard of : besides the numbers who have been very large sufferers, one lady, by his baseness and treachery, lost thirty thousand pounds ; and a young lady, an heiress, whose sole property was in his possession, lost her all to the

amount of sixty thousand pounds ; yet this miscreant lies buried. I doubt not, with a very flaming inscription on his tomb-stone, setting forth every virtue which he did not possess. It were juster by far that the following epitaph should adorn his sepulchre :

Hic jacet ——— \* \* \* \* \*

Alieni appetens alienique profusus ;

Who robbed the Hangman of his Fees,  
And by Suicide deprived the Laws of a just Revenge,

Had this wretch, indeed, robbed no one but the hangman, it had been well ; but, by a death too sudden, he has added to his other robberies that of robbing the world of its right to hold him up to public infamy, and to make him a terrible example.

Enough of such monsters !—Let us now

view the real honest money-making censorious citizen of London, (for he also can descant at large on the vices and excesses of the age,) and let us inquire of what real benefit or use he is of to society at large : he is but little better than the Dutch merchant, whose soul is his till, and looks up to God only through the crevice by which the money passes into it : he walks in no temple but his counting house, and has no faith but in his banker, and his heart strings and his purse strings are synonymous terms. In the morning he goes to the Exchange, is occupied all the forenoon, and best part of the day, in making money ; goes home to dinner, gormandises at table and gets drunk after ; goes to bed, rises the next morning to repeat his daily labours ; gets drunk again, is cuckolded, and dies. A fortnight after his burial, his son makes

water on his grave ; his favourite dog follows the young master's example ; and this hopeful youth, for whom he has been toiling for many years, takes as much pains to spend the fortune, as his father did to acquire it.

A good merchant is a good man ; and a good man is a good merchant : it is also said, that a good mason is a good man, and that a good man also is a good mason. I do not dispute it ; but it reminds me of sharpers tossing up for money with fools, and crying, Heads *I* win, Tails *you* lose.

I now return to a more interesting object ; need I inform my readers that I mean myself?

After a few years enjoyment of every pleasure and satisfaction in life, which



that age of pleasure, extravagance, and elegance, was calculated to afford, a sudden and unforeseen event took place, the result of which I have ever had cause to repent from that early hour to the present moment. I do not wish to rip up old grievances, especially as one of the parties who profited at my expence is dead, and the other is a near friend. It is sufficient to say, that I conceived myself most unjustly treated relative to a promotion that took place in the first regiment of foot guards, in which corps I had then the honour of being an ensign. Great parliamentary interest was the cause of it, to the entire destruction of my promotion in a service to which I was most devoutly attached ; and of which I resolved to experience the substance, not the disgraceful empty shadow of parading about the streets of London, with the outward



flimsy insignia of a soldier, a cockade and red coat. This I evinced by voluntarily going into the Hessian service to America very shortly after. Had I remained in the first regiment of guards, I should at this moment have had the honour of commanding that regiment for above a twelvemonth ; which the rotation of names here mentioned will plainly prove to my old friends, the brigade of guards ; they were as follow : D'Oyley, Duff, Strickland, Fanshaw, Edmonstone, Hanger. My old acquaintance General D'Oyley has long been out of the regiment ; soon after the Helder expedition. Duff, before him, had a regiment. Strickland quitted the regiment and retired as a private gentleman, and is since dead. Fanshaw sold out, and went into the Russian service, in which, a very few years ago, he was still living. Edmon-

stone died aid-de-camp to General Ric-tarell, the commander in chief of the Ger-man troops under General Burgoýne in Canada. Next came a youth, not much favoured by fortune or by fame, your humble servant, George Hanger. My gallant and old friend, George Ludlow, (General Ludlow,) who now commands the first regiment of guards, was not above half-way up the ensigns when I quitted the regiment, with four captains junior to me. This statement will prove to those who are conversant with the pro-motion of the army, in what an high si-tuation I should have stood in point of rank and command, had I remained in the guards. I quitted the guards at the period when the American war com-menced, in which fate destined me to serve. With a heart-felt satisfaction I reflect that I had the sense of my regi-

ment with me, who wished me to remain with them, and felt the injury I had sustained: and with so favourable an eye did that distinguished officer and true friend to a soldier, General Hervey, view my case, as to tell me, that if I would draw up a memorial, he would present it to the King. All my friends advised me to remain in the regiment; and my worthy friend, that enlightened commander, Sir William Draper, in particular advised me so to do. I never shall forget his words:—"You are used very ill, but you cannot contend against power: put up with it, and use it at some future period as a plea to be served." But I was too young to take advice, and too haughty and high in blood tamely to brook an injury without resenting it, or shewing all the indignation I felt on the occasion. Deaf to all advice, and

blind to my own interest, vexed, heated, and agitated with an honest consciousness of the wrongs I had suffered, I resolved on quitting the guards, and of serving in the Hessian troops in America. I gave in my resignation, but never mentioned my intentions to any soul living, except to my worthy, old, and dear friend and protector, Lord Southampton, then General Fitzroy. I cannot pass over in silence the many favours and friendships I received from that accomplished and excellent person. I should be guilty of the basest ingratitude did I not acknowledge them. He was my kind friend and sage adviser through life: and with truth I can say, that whenever I followed his advice, I prospered; and, when I failed to consult him, I was always unsuccessful. I am vain, and not without reason, of the inti-

mate footing on which I lived with this nobleman for many years ; and, until the day of his death, I possessed both his friendship and confidence, which my old friend, George Fitzroy, the present Earl, well knows. He was then General Fitzroy, and had served in the seven-years' war in Germany, under the orders of Prince Ferdinand, during which time he had contracted a great intimacy with General Schliefen, who then was minister to his Serene Highness the Landgrave of Hesse Cassel. His Highness was graciously pleased, from the application of General Schliefen, to appoint me a captain in the Hessian Jager corps. At my particular request, General Fitzroy kept my application a profound secret ; for I was determined not to continue in the British service ; though, had my intentions been



known, some persons, perhaps, might have had sufficient influence on me to have deterred me from my project.

In my way down to Andover in Hampshire, where I kept my hunters, I called on my old and intimate friend, Lord Spencer Hamilton, and imparted to him what I had done, in confidence of his secrecy. I kept this design of mine so profound a secret, that it was not in the least known or suspected, till one day, after hunting, while I was at dinner with my friend Lord Egmont, and some other gentlemen, at the Castle-inn, Marlborough, the waiter informed me that an express was arrived to me from the Hessian minister. After reading the contents, that he had received a dispatch from Hesse Cassel, in which his Serene Highness the Landgrave had appointed me a captain in

his corps of Jagers, and had sent my commission to him, I threw the letter on the table for the company to peruse, which they did with the utmost astonishment. I set off for London the next day, and ordered all my horses to town to be sold at my old friend Tattersall's, of whose regard for me I shall have occasion to speak more fully in another part of this Work. By this time I had contracted a mortgage on my estate of thirteen thousand pounds, and had been for some time resolved to sell it, and take a general review of my affairs, with which I had been for a long time but little acquainted; constantly raising money from time to time as I wanted it. Preparatory to a sale, I had employed a person, with my steward, to survey the estate.

About this time, being in company with

Mr. Wyatt the great land-surveyor, with whom I was on terms of the greatest intimacy, he said to me, “ George Hanger, you have had your estate surveyed, and, as I am informed, intend to sell it: I have been in your neighbourhood lately, and know, I believe, rather more of your estate than you do yourself.” To which I readily assented, or he must have known very little of it indeed. “ Then,” continued he, “ as I have a regard for you, I request, if you have any faith in my knowledge of estates, that you will put it into my hands to dispose of it,—but upon one condition, to which you must, before this company, pledge me your honour.”—I knew my man; and therefore, on my honour, I promised to assent to whatever he had to propose.—“ I have,” continued he, “ a very good estate of my own, and, besides, I am paid very libe-

rally by several noblemen and gentlemen for the management of their estates, and do not want to make any money of you : you must, therefore, faithfully promise me, that you will never request my acceptance of one farthing for my trouble ; my expences I will charge you, and nothing more, as my design and wish is to serve you as a friend." Such was the generous and noble manner in which my friend Wyatt acted by me. " Your estate," said he, " is very valuable ; far more so than you imagine. I have been acquainted with all the particulars of it by a skilful man, a surveyor who lives near you, who advised me to buy it ; but I have just bought an estate, or I would have purchased it : but that is out of the question, as I have no more money."

I thought myself inexpressibly fortu-

nate to have met with a man of such known integrity, who came forward as a friend to serve me; and rejoiced in leaving my affairs, on my departure for America, in the hands of so honest and able a man: but, alas! cruel Fate, which has destined me to suffer misfortunes and misery in various shapes, had decreed it otherwise, by the sudden death of my friend a short time after I had left my native shores. This melancholy and unfortunate event proved my ruin: the particulars of which I shall relate in their proper place.

Mr. Wyatt passed several days with me and my steward in surveying the estate before my departure, when I gave him the fullest warrant of attorney that could be made by law, to sign, seal, sell,



&c. &c. &c. and was happy in so doing. After Mr. Wyatt had completed the survey, and made his calculation on the estate, I asked him, if he had formed a sufficient judgment of it to tell me nearly what it was worth? He replied, "It is, honestly, worth twenty-four thousand pounds: and, I give you my honour, that if I had not lately bought an estate, I would myself give you that sum for it." I shall now for a time drop the subject of my estate; but I judged it necessary to mention the value at which he estimated it, on account of the sum for which it was sold some time afterwards.

I now returned to London, and was presented at Court, as a Hessian officer, by my friend Baron Kutzleben, the Hessian minister. This took place early in

January, and I sailed the fifteenth day of the ensuing March from Portsmouth for America,

I should be guilty of ingratitude if I did not acknowledge the singular kindness which Lord North shewed me when I first resolved on quitting the British service. I had the honour of being as well acquainted with him as his high rank as minister of the country, and my inferior situation, could admit; for I was accustomed to meet him oftentimes in many of the first and gayest circles in London: for this able statesman, the best of private characters, the most pleasant, engaging, and amiable of mankind, did not bury himself in the inaccessible retreats of Downing-street; but, when affairs of state did not require his attention, relaxed himself in the fashionable

assemblies, which he never failed to enliven by that incomparable flow of wit and good humour which he possessed.

It was absolutely necessary that I should, if not recommended by the minister, have his permission ; or at least that he should acknowledge me as an officer and a gentleman. On my relating to this liberal and friendly nobleman how I had been treated, and merely requesting him to recommend me as a gentleman to the Hessian minister, he replied, “ My dear Mr. Hanger, however displeased you may be, from the history you have related to me, surely you do not prefer any foreign service to your own ; and there will be several new regiments raised, in which you, from your situation\*, are entitled to serve,

\* At this time I had the rank of Captain.

with an advanced rank.”—“ My Lord, I understand your meaning, and return you my most sincere thanks for your kind intention ; and I assure you, on my honour, I shall be as grateful for your intended goodness as if I accepted it : but I find myself so vexed, grieved, and injured, that nothing on earth can make me remain in the British army.” He then said, “ I am sorry you are so determined, Mr. Hanger ; but if you will bring the Hessian minister to me any morning, I will give orders that you shall be admitted, and will say any thing you shall please to the Hessian minister.”—“ My Lord, I most gratefully acknowledge my obligations to you : I wish you only to recommend me to his Serene Highness the Landgrave’s protection.”—“ It shall be done, Sir :”—and of course it was, and

in the most friendly and handsome manner.

Ye young officers, who may read these pages, take warning from what I have suffered by not accepting of this kind offer, and in being too hasty and violent in quitting the guards. It is of little avail for those who have no power to kick against the pricks : you will only wound your own heel.

It is necessary, before I step on ship-board for America, that I should mention, on account of the ruin which soon afterwards overtook me, that I went to every public place in London, for near three months, and dressed in my foreign uniform. My departure for the war was known to the whole town ; and it may



surely be believed that those to whom I was indebted would not have permitted me to depart without paying them, or finding them security:—In short, I did give them the most satisfactory security; for I gave them my own, confirmed by that of Mr. Wyatt.



## CHAPTER I.

*Advice to Bishops and Legislators, how to correct the Immorality and Jacobinism of the Age.*

IT is a pity that so worthy a man as Mr. Brothers the prophet, and Prince of the Hebrews, should be shut up and confined in a mad-house! The poor man is no more mad than I am: he is only, like myself, a little flighty in his imaginations; and his favourite topics, like mine, are religion and morality, in which surely we are both worthy of praise. His influence with the populace might be turned to advantage in these times; for many had so great a reverence and respect for

him as to kiss the skirts of his coat when he was taken up and took his leave of the public. It is a pity they did not go a little higher when they were about it. Besides, he might be made useful, and brought over at a cheap rate ; for I do not think he would have the assurance to rate his abilities at any thing like thirty-seven thousand pounds, which others have done ; not that I mean to suggest its being more than equivalent to their superior talents. Though only Prince of the Hebrews, he could not have the confidence to demand one-tenth part of that sum. His prophecies would be of infinite service ; they would act as a tub which amuses the whale, and enables the state-pilot to steer his vessel without interruption. An Elizabeth Canning, a Cock-lane ghost, or a Prophet, when moved by able hands, may be made of the greatest service to

Government, by drawing off the impertinent curiosity and attention of the People to the management of State affairs.

The price of bread might be greatly lowered, if a proper attention were paid to the consumption of meat, particularly in the city of London. A pound of meat is sufficient for any gentleman, or reputable tradesman, for dinner, who does no labour: for those who work hard, one pound and a half is fully sufficient. I would have every man punished with one day's labour on the highways, or paving the street, or erecting fortifications to protect our country, who dared to exceed the above-mentioned allowance. Such a regulation would be beneficial to agriculture, and tend to bring down the price of corn; as, the consumption of butcher's meat being thus diminished, more corn

would be sown, and less attention paid to pasture lands, which would be of considerable advantage to the poor in reducing the price of bread, which is the staff of life ; for much animal food is destructive of health, and generates many diseases, and particularly the gout : the citizens of London would become more active, and their bellies in time be reduced to a moderate size, much to their own benefit and the comfort of their wives.

The health, &c. of the citizens might be considerably expedited by a proper regulation of the quantity of liquor drank in the day, as nothing increases the protuberance of the belly so much as liquor. The belly might as well be excised as many other things, and put under the inspection of the revenue-officers : and I make no doubt but that some ingenious



mechanic would invent an instrument to gauge the stomach and abdominal cavities to as great a nicety as any other tub or vessel.

The country would derive a considerable additional advantage from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council; for, if they would not abstain from feasting to excess, the State would be benefited at least by their labour: we should then see no more unwieldy aldermen sweltring and rolling along Cornhill to the 'Change, moving no faster than land-crabs; but they would come bounding along like nimble deer, to which indeed they now are as unlike, except about the head, as the antelope and the elephant. Their wives, instead of frowning at the assemblies at Haberdashers' Hall, on the approach of their bulky husbands,

would receive them with simpers and with smiles. What an alteration the diminution of bellies would create in the city, where the women are so continually and grossly employed in reproaching their husbands with gormandising and gluttony.

Were these salutary rules enforced, the citizens would not only be benefited in their health, but also in domestic happiness; for, with the diminution of the belly, we should perceive a visible decrease of the brow-antlers, and *honest men* \* would be seen only at the west end of the town, where belly or no belly makes no difference; for, if a man keep himself as lank and sleek as a greyhound dog for a race, it will not insure him a smooth forehead,

\* A title occasionally given, and with great consideration, propriety, and humanity, to cuckolds.

in the parishes of St. James's, St. George's, St. Mary-la-bonne, and St. John's, Westminster.

It is, as I have before observed, the height of all human wickedness to think carnally of woman in any other respect than for the purpose of obeying the command of increase and multiply; and it is for this purpose, and this alone, that certain desires are implanted in our frame. If we exceed this original design, we act in direct contradiction to the designs of Providence, which gave us the means of gratification, but has made it our duty also to consist in using moderation in all things; and to apply all our faculties to answer the immediate ends for which they were given us. The contrary of this is not only considered as a very heinous offence by me, but also by the religious fathers and mo-

ralists in more former and more pious ages, as related by Athanasius Vincentius in his Notes on Theoph. Aletheus, who was of opinion, that “scortatio cum propria uxore committi potest, cum non liberorum quærendorum causa, sed ad ex-  
plendam libidinem, vel cum prægnante aut lactante res habetur.” Young married women also should live recluse for a certain time after marriage, and not be even permitted to appear in public: but instead of this, in open defiance of all modesty, they frequently consummate the marriage at inns and public places, and come down to breakfast the next morning, and appear in all the public circles as unembarrassed as if nothing had happened, and as unconcerned as if they had only undergone the operation of phlebotomy in the arm for a slight cold. Here I must take the opportunity of paying a

due tribute of praise to the superior delicacy and modesty of the Jewish nation, who rigidly observe a custom highly deserving the imitation of Christians. They separate themselves from their wives the day after consummation, for fifteen days and nights, during which period the bride is consigned to the care of her female relations. For my own part, I am free to acknowledge, though not overburthened with any *mauvaise honte*, nor particularly squeamish, I have never witnessed a scene of this nature without my modesty having suffered a considerable shock.

If the Earl Marshal of these days was compelled to do his duty at the court, which his predecessors in distant reigns so strictly attended to, which was no less than to shave all prostitutes that might be



found within the royal purlieus, we might expect shortly a very considerable amendment in the virtue of our females, or at least the satisfaction of knowing that the immodest would be disgraced and punished. The present Earl Marshal cannot surely refuse to revive an ancient ceremony, which would contribute so much to the destruction of the immorality and Jacobinism of this sinful age.

With pain I am compelled to observe, that men and women too frequently go to church for wicked purposes, and not for the sake of prayers or preaching. The impiety and Jacobinism is so great, that men even at church cannot keep their eyes off the women ; and the women are equally in their turn as culpable: such ogling and peeping through fans at their sweethearts, as is frequently practised, is



highly to be censured by every chaste and pious Christian. All these unhal-  
lowed practices can, as they ought, be  
very easily prevented. The men and  
women should be compelled to sit on  
different sides of the church: the women  
should also be secreted from public view  
by green blinds, as the girls are at the  
Magdalen: they then would have nothing  
to divert their attention from the devout  
office in which they are engaged. They  
should not also be permitted to go out at  
the same door with the men; and if there  
be but one door to the church, the wo-  
men should pass out first, and the men  
some time after them. But at present,  
there is such crowding and squeezing after  
service, particularly at evening service,  
that it is impossible for the most watchful  
matron to prevent a young lady from re-  
ceiving, *en passant*, a *billet doux*, or

enjoying a tender squeeze. All this may be seen and felt in the utmost perfection in the chapel of the Magdalen Hospital every Sunday evening.

Too little attention in general is paid to the sermon ; some even fall asleep, to the great scandal of all pious people.—However long, tedious, dull, or unintelligible a sermon may be, there is no excuse to be framed for such scandalous neglect and inattention to public devotion. This may very easily be prevented, as there is hardly any church now, that is not frequented by some military corps. The drummers and trumpeters should be ordered to attend with their drums and trumpets, and, on the priest giving the signal, at the end of every long sentence or full stop, the drummers might give a ruffle for a few seconds, or the trum-

peters sound an alarm : by these means, the congregation would be kept alert and attentive to the instructions of the clergyman. It would also give him time to take breath, or take some refreshment out of a bottle, which may be easily concealed in his white handkerchief: it would recruit his spirits, and give him fresh strength to continue his pious admonitions, which is a very fatiguing duty when a man exerts himself with the energy that his office requires.

Far is it from my intent to degran-  
dize\* any part of our clergy, as I am

\* The Author is conscious that this word is not to be found even in the verbose Johnson; but as he feels himself fully as well entitled to fabricate words to express his ideas as any of his predecessors, he has no apology to make for any *new phraseology* which may distinguish this work.

of opinion they should all, according to their different stations, be enabled to keep up a sufficient degree of figure and appearance suitable to their dignity and calling. For, although St. John's food was locusts and wild honey, and his raiment of camel's hair, that is, the skin of a camel, it would shock any reflecting man to see a bishop ranging the fields for his daily food. John the Baptist must have been quite different from our priests, who, when they pray for their daily bread, I am apt to think, frequently include something more than the sexton thinks of. Yet if I can, without lowering the dignity or decreasing the revenues of the clergy, increase their influence and authority, and at the same time alleviate the burthens and suppress the complaints of their parishioners, by pointing out a new mode of tribute to

the church, reciprocally advantageous to both parties ; I may hope to receive the blessing and thanks both of the clergy and the laity.

The great tithes, both to the clergy and others, are paid with no small degree of reluctance. But the smaller, such as pigs, poultry, eggs, and milk, are complained of bitterly and naturally, because this tribute is collected from the lower classes of the people. I therefore propose, that, in lieu of pigs, poultry, eggs, and milk, the clergyman in every parish be permitted to take every tenth child, both from the rich and the poor. The rich man, who can maintain his children, can equally afford to pay a fine if he chooses to retain his children ; while the poor man, who cannot afford to maintain his children, will be happy in seeing them



put to such good uses as I shall shortly enumerate. The children in each parish may be classed and drawn for by lots, as the horses are for the supplementary cavalry. When they are quite young, the clergyman must be permitted to let them out by the week to beggar women, who haunt the streets or travel the country, to excite the charity of the humane and compassionate\*. When they are got to be six or seven years old, or upwards, they may be let to farmers to keep sheep on a common, or fetch the cows home, or to go of errands and other useful purposes.

When the male children arrive at the age of fourteen, the clergyman may then sell them for fifteen pounds per head to the

\* The average price for children let out to beggar-women, is from half-a-crown to three shillings per week.



recruiting sergeants : there will be no necessity to give these boys any hand-money for enlisting ; and as only three pounds is stopped to provide the recruit with necessaries, there will be a clear profit of twelve pounds to the clergyman, except a crown bowl of punch to the sergeant ; and the parson will have also no objection, I dare say, to smoke his pipe and partake of it. This will be an immense source of revenue to the clergy, and advantage to the country at large ; for, according to the reports of our annual birth of male children, our army will never want recruits, and be kept complete.

The clergy should also adopt some tribute in lieu of the small tithes ; as they cannot but perceive that the profits derived from them are comparatively small, and so very unpopular, that it is like the

devil shearing his hogs, where there is more outcry than wool. The simile may be said to run on all-fours, since the celebrated Burke has represented the common people as a swinish multitude.

Considerable fault will be found with, and many objections made to, my method of providing for the children of the poor ; and I shall certainly be condemned by all the pious old women, by all the promoters of public Sunday-schools, and by all the schoolmasters in Great Britain. They will say, how shocking it will be not to have the poor children taught to write and read, without which they will be little better than heathens, and incapable of being instructed in the Christian faith ! But I say it is no such thing ; and, what is more, I will prove it. Reading only enables them to study seditious and bad

books; and a knowledge of writing and accounts has brought many a man to the gallows, who otherwise would have lived a useful member to the community. When I was a boy, I remember well, no servant in my father's family could write or read, except the butler and the house-keeper: and I am certain not one of the swinish multitude in the parish ever knew one single letter in the alphabet: and it will be allowed, I am certain, that the churches were as much frequented, and the people as religious in those days as they are now. And although there was some Jacobitism, there was no such thing as Jacobinism, or French principles, to be dreaded in the whole country. Without being able to read, they repeated the prayers after the clergyman and clerk, knelt down, stood up, turned round, and bowed, just as well as they do now:

though, perhaps, they did not perform the latter ceremony of the bow with as much grace as in this accomplished age, in which every footman and servant-maid learns to dance. To those who disapprove of my beneficial method of providing for the children of the poor, I will reply, that it is as dangerous to a state to instruct, and enlighten by education, the swinish multitude, as it is dangerous to a farmer to take the rings out of his pigs' noses, and turn them into a field of potatoes.

Having thus plainly proved that my system of providing for the children of the poor will not only be advantageous to the clergy, but also of infinite service to the body politic and military strength of the state, I am in hopes that the Legislature will take it into their most serious

consideration. And as the clergy already enjoy an handsome part of the whole fruits of the earth and labour of man, and a tenth part also of the brute creation, I can see no reason why they should be debarred from the tithing of the human species, as a commutation for the smaller tithes, when it will be attended with such beneficial advantages to the nation at large.

In addition to the foregoing advantages, the clergy might draw some further profit, and the parishes be much relieved, if there are any blind men in their parishes. They are much sought after by beggar-women, and are even preferred to children, and will let out at hire, by the week, at a more advanced price, as the following scene will prove, which passed between two beggar-women very lately



in Covent-garden. One was leading a blind man, and the other with an innocent fatherless babe in her arms : the former meeting the latter, and being old acquaintances, and proficient in the mumping trade, the following conversation took place between them.

“ Well, Molly, how do you carry on matters now-a-days ? ” “ Indeed, Susan, I am very hard put to it to live, considering the dearness of every thing, and that I am obliged to pay half-a-crown a-week for the hire of this infant.” “ Half-a-crown a-week for the hire of a child is very dear, indeed, Molly ; for I pay only three-and-sixpence for my blind man, and he is as good as an husband to me into the bargain.”

I am, for my part, quite dismayed at



the learning of the common people; for there is not a tap-boy at a public house, or a ticket porter, that does not every evening read the debates in parliament, and who cannot talk to you now about the Bill of Rights, the fundamental Principles of the Constitution, and Magna Charta; all which were formerly as indifferent to them as the parts they sat on, or, to use the language of Oliver Cromwell, as Magna Farta. And as to the women, if on a Sunday evening, after church-time, you can insinuate yourself so much into the good graces of a scullion-wench, or house-maid, as to prevail on her to take a cup of tea with you, she will be sure to let you know that she has read Pamela, Shakespeare, and the Rights of Woman, and the Lord knows what besides.

There is a distinguished character in many country parishes, whose peculiar merits I had nearly forgotten to celebrate ; I mean the overgrown farmer, who rents from a thousand to two thousand pounds *per annum*. In some parishes these people are known by the dignified name of King Farmer. In this gentleman many dignified offices are concentrated, such as church-warden, overseer of the poor, and tax-gatherer. In fine, he often performs every function in the parish, but those of marrying, christening, and burying. This man is as generous as he is opulent : from a command of money, he is much respected and beloved by the little farmers, to whom he advances cash to pay their harvest expences ; for which generous loan, they, in return, send their corn, the moment it is thrashed, to his granaries, which is productive of many

benefits to the community at large, and especially to the poor. First of all, it saves the little farmer the trouble of sending his grain to market, and enables the king farmer, by having an immense quantity on hand, to regulate the price; so that when it is too dear, he can, by bringing in a vast quantity, glut and overstock the market, and reduce the price, that the poor may be served at a cheap rate; an object which always predominates in his mind, as he has too much integrity, humanity, and patriotism, to forestall and enhance the price of corn.

In many parishes the chief land-holders, from their public occupations, are compelled to reside in London, and frequently do not see their estates for many years together. Their lands and tenants are, in such cases, generally left to the protec-

tion of an attorney, who has the collecting of rents, letting of leases, holding courts, and the friendly duty of settling disputes, which *he never fails* to do, between the farmers. When the priest of the parish, the attorney, and the king farmer act together, and cordially join hand in hand ; especially when the parson is admitted into the quorum, and acts as justice of the peace, as many do ; then that parish may justly consider itself to be supremely blessed and happy ; for a triunion formed of perfect piety, strict justice, and unabused wealth, must be productive of the most sovereign advantages to the inhabitants of any district who are so fortunate as to be protected and governed by them. They will be shielded against impiety, litigious law-suits, and extortionate prices for provisions. Religion, peace, and plenty, will prevail ;—immorality, op-

pression, and forestalling, will be things unknown to them; and in this happy parish there will be nothing wanting but a ducking-stool to keep the scolding women in order: and then their felicity will stand unrivalled in the annals of time, until the millenium shall make its appearance on the earth.

In addition to that truly pious regulation, which I trust speedily will be enforced, of not permitting any persons, excepting professional medical men, to walk the streets during divine service on Sundays, I cannot refrain from paying a due tribute of praise to the piety and morality of a Noble Lord, who lately brought a bill into Parliament to prevent the publication of Sunday newspapers. Such an act of piety and virtue is rarely to be found in the youth of this sinful



age, so abounding with immorality and Jacobinism. This singular act in favour of true piety and devotion, and for the more strict observance of the Sabbath, will ever stand conspicuous in the annals of history as a proof of superior virtue, and must give joy to every moral and reflecting mind; though, to the disgrace of our Legislature, the bill was not permitted to pass into a law: for on that day it must be acknowledged to be highly indecorous to read any other book but the Scriptures.

I would also recommend to a certain member of Parliament, so eminently distinguished for his vital zeal for the Christian religion, to enforce a more strict observance of the Sabbath, by bringing before the House of Commons another bill, to inflict severe punishment on any per-



son who shall be so profane as even to hum or whistle any tune, except a psalm or hymn, on the Sabbath-day: also for a more strict observance relative to abstaining from labour on Sundays; for it is positively forbid by the fourth commandment, and in the most explicit terms.

Notwithstanding this positive ordinance, we see in various instances the Sabbath violated, and in the grossest manner: but I am the more astonished, when, even in the very churches themselves, I see men on a Sunday ringing bells; for labour it is even to toll the bell; and extreme hard labour, and profane to a degree, to ring a batch of treble bobs for a leg of mutton and trimmings, which, I am grieved to relate, is often done on the evenings of the Sabbath. But it may be said, that, as the tolling the

bell is for a pious purpose, to call the congregation together, the sanctity of the object halloweth the act. This may be so ; but as, in former times, the Lord commanded the priests on the Sabbath day to blow the trumpets and horns to assemble the people, I do not perceive any reason why that religious old custom should not be revived. Look to the tabernacle of the pious Doctor Squintum ; there is no ringing of bells in that holy temple : the lambs of grace, by instinct, know the time that the shepherd calleth his flock together in that holy sheep-fold. Anxious as I am to assist in the correction of immorality and Jacobinism, towards which nothing can more powerfully contribute than the keeping the Sabbath in an exemplary manner, and having some genius for mechanism, I sat me down to invent a machine, in which a large Newfound-

land or mastiff dog might toll a church-bell, in a manner somewhat similar to the wheel in which the turnspit dogs turn the meat: but, to my mortification, just as I had finished the model, which, now being of no use, I intend to request the Royal Society to do me the honour to accept, and was going to lay it before the Bench of Bishops for their sanction and approbation, I recollected that the dog was included in the fourth commandment, in the words,—“and every thing that is within thy gates.”

Thus was I foiled in my endeavours to promote piety: at the same time I am ready to acknowledge my double disappointment, as I also entertained the hope of gaining a large sum of money by my ingenious invention; as I imagined for certain that every parish in the three kingdoms

would have purchased one of these anti-jacobin canambulatory wheels for their churches, that being the name I had given to this ingenious piece of mechanism. A bright thought, however, came suddenly into my head, that if the parson of the parish were to steal a dog and put him into the wheel, it would not be a breach of the fourth commandment; but I never recollected, till a friend, who is connected with a police-office, reminded me that such a contrivance would not only be a breach of the eighth commandment, but also of an English act of parliament, that has some unlucky clauses in it about hanging and transportation. So all my hopes vanished.

Works of absolute necessity should alone be performed on the Sabbath-day; such as the defending one's self against

an enemy, &c. &c.; for remember the child that gathered sticks on that day, amongst the Israelites, was stoned to death. Some most pious Christians, as I have been informed, have had it in contemplation to propose to parliament, that a tax be levied on every housekeeper who, on a Sunday, shall entertain any person at his table. I trust this pious and laudable endeavour to suppress immorality and Jacobinism is not extinguished, but only lies dormant, from the pressure of State affairs. Such a tax would strike more at the root of evil than any other; for revelling and feasting on the Sabbath-day is not only profane in itself, but leads to various other enormities. How can a country expect to flourish which turns that day into gluttony, which ought to be set apart for prayer? On that day no person should take any other aliment but

bread ; nor should any liquor stronger than small beer be drank, under a most heavy fine ; and in case of inability to pay the penalty in the person fined, imprisonment and hard labour in Bridewell should be instantly inflicted, at least for one month. Thus might the people be brought to some sense of their duty to Religion, and obedience to the State : but at present, in the manner they are permitted to pass the Sabbath, especially in the metropolis, there is no hopes of reformation ; for, after divine service is over, even those who have the decency to attend it, go home and feast on meat and strong liquors ; and, not satisfied with this, in the evening the more affluent resort to the public tea-gardens, and the lower order to the ale-house, where the remainder of the day, which ought to be passed in devotion, is spent in mirth



and conviviality. But, wicked as these practices are, they are not the worst; for, gossiping, scandal-monging, and sweet-hearting, prevail on that day more than on any other in the week. These daring and glaring offences I recommend, with the zeal that becomes *me*, to the attention and correction of the legislature; and I trust they will do what becomes *them*.

A friend of mine, knowing how much my mind was bent on endeavouring to give every aid in my power to the legislature in their endeavours to mend the wicked ways of the world, favoured me with the perusal of a most valuable book, which has been long out of print. I have gained great information from it; and am convinced if that most pious prelate, to whom we are so

much indebted for his laudable endeavours to banish those abominable operadancers, whose dress and lascivious attitudes are so repugnant to real modesty, would condescend to peruse it, he might draw many valuable hints from it, which would greatly assist him in his laudable exertions and endeavours. The title of this valuable Work is as follows:

YET PLAINER ENGLISH,  
OR  
THE SHORTEST WAY  
WITH  
*WHORES AND ROGUES,*  
AND OTHER SCANDALOUS LIVERS.  
DEDICATED  
TO THE REV. WILLIAM BISSET,  
AUTHOR OF THE  
*REFORMATION SERMONS,*  
INTITLED  
PLAIN ENGLISH  
AND  
*MORE PLAIN ENGLISH.*

---

LONDON:

Printed for JOHN MARSHALL, at the Bible, in Grace-Church-Street,

MDCCV.

I shall here transcribe the author's dedication of his book, and then select a few useful hints from it, which I think well worthy of the attention both of the bishops and the legislature.

### THE DEDICATION.

*To the Pious and Learned Mr. WILLIAM BISSET, one of the Ministers of St. Catherine's, by the Tower.*

“ REVEREND SIR,

“ The world is so much obliged to you for your *Reformation Sermons*, called *Plain English*, and *More Plain English*, that I thought you the fittest patron for the third edition of this Book, intitled, *Yet Plainer English*.

“ Reverend Sir, it must be confessed, your stepping out of the common road

in reprov'g of vice, has turned many from the evil of their ways: yet, not to derogate from your matchless Sermons, I must take the liberty to say, that some of your directions, though *plain* enough, are a little too *general* to affect the hearts of some hundred sinners: I have, therefore, discovered a *short way* to reform the age, which, in this third edition, I intitle *Yet Plainer English*, as it was never proposed in your Reformation Sermons; but, *were it put in practice, it would make a heaven upon earth.*

“ I know, Reverend Sir, some will think me, as they did you, a little too *plain* with the lords and ladies of *sinful quality*, that would approve of my lashing the *little sinners*: But I am not of this opinion; for no man can be too PLAIN and BOLD in exclaiming against

*adultery, theft, drunkenness, swearing,* &c. and such other and so great impieties, as I think, since it rained fire and brimstone upon *Sodom* and *Gomorrhah*, there was never the like. If it be not now time to be PLAIN *and* SHORT with whores and rogues, however dignified and distinguished, it is time the world were at an end.

“ I confess that the *physic* I give is extremely bitter ; but the age is *dangerously ill* ; and the REMEDY, as I shew in the following sheets, must be something violent to be effectual.—Plainly, Sir, I here present to your patronage *a new Scheme of Justice* ; and, if it meets with your approbation, I shall hope our senators will smile upon it, and, in due time, find out *ways and means* to have it enacted : and, if this *New Project* for



*Reformation* should not meet with such good success, yet I shall think my labour was well bestowed if it puts Mr. Bisset, or any other reformer, on speaking *yet plainer English*, or taking a *shorter way* with the *scandalous livers* than I have here advanced.

I am,

Reverend Sir,

Your great admirer,

and very humble servant,

THE AUTHOR."

—And so am I this pious gentleman's most humble servant and professed admirer. And further, I recommend his book to the particular attention of our pious bishops and wise legislators, in their laudable endeavours to reform this sinful age; for I am clearly of opinion, that the people of the present day are in-

finitely more wicked than those of the year 1705, and that they require to have yet plainer English spoken to them, and a new scheme of justice instituted to correct their vices ; and that a shorter way should be taken with *scandalous* livers, and particularly with the lords and ladies of sinful quality ; and that no man can be too plain and bold in exclaiming against and in correcting all immorality and Jacobinism of every sort, kind, quality, and colour. A total new system of correction must take place ; our punishments, penalties and prisons are in general of little avail : our prisons are palaces, and places of ease ; and that in Coldbath-fields, instead of a penitentiary-house, is an elegant retirement, an *otium cum dignitate*, a real *rus in urbe*, or an *urbs in rure*, whichever you please. No, no ; none of these things will avail ; we must at last

adopt the plan of this pious gentleman, laid down with such judgment in the book I have just mentioned : from which I shall select a few passages, beginning with the Sabbath-breaker, the adulterer, and the whoremaster ; for from these three spring all the immorality and Jacobinism of the present times.

The author of this pious book writes as follows : “ And in regard the *sabbath-breaker* is the greatest criminal of this kind, his doom shall be this : one third part of his estate, whatever it is, should be forfeited, to get the poor people some clothes, that they may make their appearance at church. Then, as for himself, he should be forced to build a seat at his own charge, which should overlook the rest of the church, and there should he sit every Lord’s day for a twelvemonth ;

and the reader should be sent home after him to inquire how much of the sermon he remembers; and whether he can repeat the doctrine, the method, and the subdivisions. If he gives not a good account, his confinement must continue. Farther, should the sabbath-breaker be ever so old, yet he should be obliged to say the catechism in the church, before a full congregation, once a month for one year. Were this prescription of punishment but well looked after, England, I am persuaded, would not expose herself to the wrath of Heaven every Lord's day as she does."

And I am also persuaded she would not; and the sooner we see these wise and pious regulations enforced, the more effectually shall we be able to strike at the root of those vices that infest us.

He proceeds to speak in the following manner, of fornicators, adulterers, and whoremasters.—“ I shall next shew the SHORTEST, being a new way to reform them. In order to punish the whole system of debauchery, I'll first begin with the kind keeper of quality, let him be Lord or Duke 'tis matter of indifference with me, and the method I'd take with him should at once discover and punish him. A proclamation should be published that every Miss that is kept by a Lord or Duke, upon making the discovery, should have three thousand pounds confiscated for her own use, out of her keeper's estate ; three thousand pounds should also be confiscated, out of his estate, to the poor of the parish where he has his seat ; and four thousand pounds more to carry on the war. Farther, the person thus discovered, should be obliged to publish

an advertisement of his own shame, at his own charge, in the Gazette for a month together: and should any person of quality solicit any street-walker, or any other; upon good evidence of the fact, she should have one thousand pounds forfeited out of his estate, and he should be divested of all his titles, and thrown out of all capacity to serve in any office of trust or profit in the three kingdoms.—Let us now descend to the common sort of mankind. The fornicator should be whipt from Guildhall to Charing Cross; a third part of his estate should go to carry on the war, a third part to the person that makes the discovery, and a third part to the poor of the parish, and himself sent over seas into her majesty's service. The adulterer should refund his wife's fortune, have the marriage nullified, his own personal estate should go to main-



tain poor men's sons at the university, and he himself should enter into her majesty's service. The gallant that is surprised with his Miss, should have his estate confiscated to maintain the hospitals, and himself sent to Bridewell to beat hemp two years, and afterwards go into the army."

Now, in all these points I differ but in a very small degree with this pious man's instructions. The poor being much better provided for in the present days, our universities also being in the highest state of affluence, and our hospitals supported on a most liberal and extensive plan, I think that the different sums of money which he wishes to be appropriated to those uses, should, with that part he already directs, be appropriated to carry on the war.

Moreover, provided these laws were well and duly enforced, they would bring in an immense revenue : and certain I am, the income tax might very speedily be repealed ; by which the burthens of the people would be greatly relieved, and the country enabled to carry on the war at the expence of vice. It certainly is the shortest way to deal with whores and rogues ; and by these means we should speedily get rid of them all. Our coffers would be filled, and our armies recruited ; and in time, these salutary measures would be the means of plucking up by the roots the immoralities that abound among us.

In addition to these pious institutions, let that moral law, which has been already agitated, immediately take place, for no person whatever, excepting medical

men, to walk the streets during the time of divine service on the sabbath-day. But as no person could then stir out of his house to fetch a medical man, in case of sickness in the family, during the hours of divine service on Sundays, I shall take the liberty of giving a few hints to the bishops and legislators, how all medical men should act on that day. They should be stationed as the watchmen are, and each have his separate walk, and keep moving, and going their rounds with diligence and attention.

In case of sickness it would be necessary to have proper signals appointed to attract their attention. For instance, if a man was taken ill, a pair of breeches might be hung out of the window on a long pole ; if a woman, a petticoat ; and if she be taken in labour, a birch broom,

or a pair of ram's horns. If any lady should require the obstetric aid of an accoucheur, and he should have turned round the corner of the street, he may be called back by beating on a frying-pan with the poker; as that sonorous music must attract his ear at a considerable distance.

In these times of universal alarm and general arming throughout the nation, I am astonished that administration have been so backward in shewing their personal zeal in the defence of the country; especially after the laudable examples daily before their eyes, of the most distinguished characters, as well as private gentlemen, gallantly stepping forward to protect their native land from invasion\*.

\* In the Bloomsbury association, Dennet the banker is a serjeant, the Chancellor a corporal, and

It must have grieved a heart of stone, on the last review, in Hyde Park, of the volunteers, on the nativity of our sovereign, to have viewed so many respectable men so bespattered and besmeared from head to foot, without a single dry thread on their bodies; the water absolutely running out at their breeches knees:—and then their dear wives, and lovely daughters, following the fate of the husband and parent; some returning home with shoes, and some without shoes, from Bunhill-row to Ealing or Acton. Severer service never was seen. What with women fainting through fatigue, drums beating, dogs barking, and children half-drowned crying, a more lamentable scene

the Duke of Bedford a private; and all in the same company, serjeant Dennet, corporal Loughborough, private Bedford:—and the Duke of Montrose is a private trooper in Col. Herries's corps of cavalry.

never was exhibited to the sympathizing spectator.

Before this day of universal distress, I had lamented that I never had the honour done me to be called upon to enrol myself in any of the volunteer corps in London:—I therefore, that day, which never can or will be forgotten, staid at home; and, feeling, from experience, what the gallant soldier suffers on a march, from inclemency of weather, the melting sight must have drawn many a tear from my eyes. Administration would be badly occupied, if obliged to attend to the drill three or four times a-week, which they must do to be tolerably perfect, and to handle well their arms: they are much better employed in handling the treasury stores, and guarding the State from external and internal dangers. Yet they



might do something, by way of encouraging others. I therefore propose the following plan of exercise for them, which, with the most profound deference and respect, I submit to their consideration, and wherein they might be perfected in their leisure hours, and without detaching them from that public duty they owe to their country. This is no less than to form themselves into a military musical band.

Mr. P——t, from his well-known abilities, might soon be taught to play well on the violin:—the first fiddle and leader of the band is best suited to his capacity. The D——ke of P———d will graciously condescend to play the second fiddle. There is no doubt but that Mr. D——as is already perfect master of the highland bagpipes. To Mr. W——m, as secretary

of war, I would assign the drum, and Mr. Canning may be taught the fife. Lord Gr——le has an excellent embouchure for the French-horn; the Marquis of B——ham has bellows enough to play the bassoon; George R——se should sound the bugle-horn, knowing already the different calls for service by instinct: when perfect, on that instrument, he will be of great use to the band, by sounding the assembly, not only to this small, though formidable military corps, but to their *followers*. The advance, the retreat, the halt, disperse, and skirmish, blow them in together; but never blow that fatal sound *out*: indeed his lips are not well formed to produce that tone; nor would the corps, however perfect in their discipline, understand or obey any such notice. An ode might also be composed by the Poet Laureat, or Peter Pindar, en-

titled the Vital Christian, which might be performed on Christmas-day and Good Friday. Mr. W—b—ce might also accompany the band, on particular festivals, on that solemn instrument, so much revered in ancient times, the sackbut; while Sir R—d H—ll might beat time with the Bible in one hand, and Joe Miller's Jests in the other:

When the theatre is ready, and the performers all in their places, Lord L—p—l may draw up the curtain, and his son, between the acts, be permitted to snuff the candles and sweep the stage. The whole might conclude with a grand naval firework, and display of the celebrated battle of the Nile, superintended by Earl Spencer, he being most justly entitled to the merits of that de-

partment. If the audience should call for a dance, the Ch——r, Mr. D—das, and Lord Liverpool, might appear in a Scotch reel; and if the audience should insist on a song, these three distinguished performers may sing, if they have not forgotten it, “Over the water to Charley,” The inferior performers may be taught the Jew’s harp, salt-box, and hurdy-gurdy. A treasury ode may also be set to music, and played by Mr. Pybus on the flute-broomstick.

I am astonished that this heaven-born administration have not introduced flogging into this country, it having been found of such infinite benefit in Ireland, in making people speak out and tell the truth. For my part, I think if the minority were to be soundly flogged, it would do them a great deal of good: I will be bound,

although they have abused the war from the very beginning to the present moment, that every one of them, before they had received five hundred lashes, would be brought to tell the truth, and confess that it was both just, and holy, and necessary. As for Charles Fox, as long as he continued in retirement, I would not have him punished ; but if he dared again to interfere with the affairs of state, and interrupt the endeavours of the present administration, who, under preternatural auspices from above, have brought this country to such a state of affluence, grandeur, and plenty, I would have no mercy on him. Sheridan has a constitution that will bear any thing ; while Grey, Tierney, and Burdett, are young enough to take some hundreds each : but above all others I would punish that impudent fellow, Courteney, with the utmost severity, for daring to

make a joke of every thing that falls from a treasury bench ; and for his wicked presumption in ridiculing the pious and laudable endeavours of the Afridoulanthropic vital Christian.



## CHAPTER II.

*Continuation of Advice to the Lovely Cyprians.*

**Y**E lovely Cyprians, never hire a young fly-catching foot-boy, or a diminutive deformed footman ; but keep a stout, sturdy young fellow, about five feet ten inches high, two feet six over the shoulders, &c. Such a servant behind your carriage, or walking after you, has a noble and elegant appearance, commands respect, and will protect you from the impertinent vulgar.

The modest women all have very tall, handsome footmen ; a diminutive little wretch would considerably diminish the dignity and pomp both of their rank and

equipages. Then how pleasing to their vanity, when some female friend in the evening says to them, "My dear Lady Kitty, how divinely beautiful you looked this morning, in your new state-chair, going to Court!—what handsome liveries, and what four charming tall footmen!—with what grace they tripped before your chair!—I vow I was enraptured with the whole.—When I am married, I shall take your equipages and servants for my model." Some very censorious men, and a few disappointed old maids, have wished to make the world believe that there are many noblemen indebted for their birth to footmen, as well as that there are footmen indebted to noblemen for theirs. But I am sure no liberal mind can for one moment harbour such a suspicion. As for you, ye beautiful Cyprians, I am certain you have too much

pride to condescend to such degrading familiarity.

But if you are very scrupulous and tenacious of your character in this respect, I recommend you to hire a stout, well-looking black servant. Then your reputation and virtue can never suffer from the most censorious and antiquated prudes; for, what woman can be suspected of submitting to the smallest familiarity from a nasty black creature?

No good servant, surely, will ever refuse to exert his fullest powers to please a kind and liberal mistress: therefore your footman's attention may be of considerable use to you, in the absence of your friend, or when the Captain, or your flash-man, is following his occupation, *scamping on his prancer upon the high*

*tober*, or at some country fair *mulking* the flatts of the quid: *prigging* a reader, or *dorsing* a darkey upon the queer roost with some other *rum blowen*, who is kind enough to *dabble his lully* in the morning whilst he lies in bed, that he may appear before you in the evening clean and neat.

For the interpretation of the above elegant phrases, I refer you to a book intitled “The London Sharper;” containing a dialogue of that most useful and elegant accomplishment, *the slang language*. I recommend it particularly to your perusal for the purity and elegance of its style, and grammatical accuracy, for which it has been so justly praised by all the Reviewers.

It will not only afford you infinite

amusement and instruction, but will guard you against various impositions practised daily on the unwary, and make you acquainted with those necessary professional accomplishments, such as *coming the fawney, lully-prigging, the dobbling cant, the running rumbler, sky-larking, blue pigeon-flying, making a stall for a reader, or a screen, or a run squeeze at the spell, the runny snarel, how to slang your mawley, to scamp, prig, floor, doo, hobble, frisk, mount, lumber, and fence; how to mount by a Jacob and force a kenn; to be careful of the young dabbs, and the Queen Elizabeth; it will teach you, when any rich man is dorsing a darkey with you upon the queer roost, how to frisk his groapers for his reader and screens; together with various other necessary and amiable accomplishments. I would with plea-*

sure have translated the above phrases and expressions ; but I am certain I should draw on me the obloquy of all the philosophers and literati, as well as doing an infinite detriment to a *brother author*; it being the duty of every man of taste and literature to endeavour to promote the sale of so valuable and much to be admired work. You, ye beauteous fair ones, so distinguished as you ever are for patronizing the arts and sciences, and endeavouring to carry them to the very height of perfection ; as that valuable book costs only sixpence, will, I am certain, contribute to the works of a writer so pregnant with instruction and sentiment.

Of all connections and intrigues, that with a flash-man is the worst : for, when you are tired of the fellow, it is very difficult to get rid of him ; and some wo-



men, who want resolution, often continue to support this fellow in idleness, who, if he were industrious, might earn a very competent livelihood on the highway, or in some ingenious art or science in this town, of which these gentlemen are in general so perfectly masters. Besides, indolence is the bane and destruction of all trade. This fellow, instead of perpetually draining your purse, if industrious, would prove a very useful member of society, and of considerable benefit to our trade and manufactures; for all philosophers and statesmen have acknowledged, that private vices are public benefits, and that no nation can be rich and powerful that is truly virtuous; and that not only highwaymen, but even house-breakers, are encouragers of industry, and contribute materially to the support of many honest tradesmen and artificers;

for the highwayman, who takes from the rich traveller, spends his guinea at night in a tavern with as much freedom as a duke, which goes ultimately to the benefit of the vintner, brewer, butcher, &c. and generally contributes largely to the support of some favourite fair one, who must not only have the necessaries of life, but be supplied with gowns, caps, linen, stockings, shoes, and many other articles of our manufactures : thus, by this gentleman's exertions, a great advantage is derived by the mercer, linen-draper, shoe maker, hosier, &c. Were all the world honest, and no housebreakers or highwaymen, half the blacksmiths and locksmiths, who form a very numerous and opulent part of our artificers, would be ruined ; for we should have no use for iron-bars and bolts to secure our houses, or locks and keys to secure our money

and property. I well knew that women even of your refined taste and exquisite judgment often find charms and accomplishments in these gentlemen, as men of elegance sometimes acknowledge the beauty, and reverence the charms, of a cinder-wench or a beggar-girl ; for beauty, from a true amateur, receives equal homage, whether it be found in a drawing-room or a dust-cart, in a duchess or a demirep.

I shall now, therefore, endeavour to instruct you how to get rid of such troublesome intruders, as these flash gentlemen generally are. During the time of the late commander in chief, some of your friends might have had interest enough to have procured him a commission in the army ; for, as his unbounded and undistinguishing philanthropy was extended to coach-

painters, glaziers, waiters, and persons of the meanest occupations, I hope it would not have been denied to one of your favourite protectors; and though he might not possess the brilliant military talents which have so eminently distinguished those officers, and justified that chaste and honourable choice of their kind and distinguished patron, yet he surely would be more able to perform his military duty than old maiden-ladies \* and children at school.

The scrupulous attention our present commander in chief has paid to the characters and conduct of officers of the army, and to the pay and clothing of the men, is absurd to a degree : and how such

\* Soon after the beginning of this war, two old maiden-ladies received the pay of subalterns in the army for a considerable time..

a conduct can have gained him that attachment which the army shews him, is astonishing to me. No moral or reflecting man can commend him, for he has even been so cruel as to publish the names in the Gazette of helpless lovely babes and superseded children at school who bore commissions; and has even taken the bread out of the poor innocents' mouths.

Then that attention paid both to the quality and quantity of the clothing delivered to the soldier, has been the means, most unjustly, of depriving officers commanding regiments of drawing for more clothing than there are soldiers in their regiment: this has so depreciated the value of many corps, that, comparatively with the former establishment, they are hardly worth the acceptance of any man of

fashion and fortune, and most particularly in the militia, who are for the most part commanded by noblemen and gentlemen of the first property and consequence in the land. Again, the commander in chief is highly to be censured for so rigidly enforcing the delivery of the clothing annually to every soldier, which, in some corps, I have been informed, was only distributed every other year. This has tended to make the army unfit for active service; for the commanding officers judged very properly, that the worse the men were clothed, the more hardy they would be, and of course more fit to bear the fatigues of a campaign. Then, his having positively enforced that every soldier's coat should be lined, which, in some militia corps, has been formerly omitted, in order to inure the soldier to cold, and make him more fit for service, has



made the soldier so tender that he will only be of use a few sun-shining days in the beginning of the campaign, and will soon be in the hospital. In short, these complications of errors are so conspicuous, that I wonder how any set of men can approve of them.

As it is totally impossible, I give you my honour of it, while the present commander in chief continues in office, for you to provide for this gentleman in the army, I recommend you to give your favourite, discarded swain, sufficient to purchase an horse, a pair of pistols, and boots; in short, to fit him out complete for his occupation, and charge him never to see your face again. If he dares intrude on you after this mark of your kindness and regard, the best method I can recommend to you is

to apply to the impress-service, when, by a few condescending familiarities with the gang, and permitting the captain, when he comes to London, now and then to visit you, you may secure a very warm birth for this impudent intruder, either in Africa or St. Domingo; from whence, it is an hundred to one, he never will return.

Thus I have given you, to the best of my abilities, a description of flash-men and footmen—how to get rid of the one, and how to make choice of the other; but without the smallest intent of lowering the former in your esteem and friendship, or of depreciating the value and respect due to the latter. Flash-men are very useful to you, and the passion for them is both natural and innocent; and as I have instructed you how to get

rid of them, or provide for them when they are no longer engaging, you will henceforward have the pleasure of enjoying their company with much greater satisfaction.

From an early attention in life to the Scriptures, I have ever held it sinful to be rich : For it is written in the Testament, that it is as impossible for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of Heaven, as it is for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle. The rich are not the happiest mortals on this earth ; and as riches tend to ensure misery in the world to come, I am astonished, therefore, that people in general should so ardently seek after them, and labour so incessantly in the pursuit of them. Considering happiness in the world to come to be infinitely preferable to the uncertain plea-

sures of this life, I have ever banished riches from my doors, and despised them as they deserve. The word camel, in the above Scripture phrase, I must inform you, as it gives me infinite pleasure to instruct you in all things, by very learned commentators is supposed to be erroneously translated, and that the real word ought to be cable: but whether it be camel or cable, both are impracticable; and the impossibility of either being accomplished, seems to threaten all rich persons with misery in the world to come.

As I have, perchance, dropped into a religious subject, I shall go a little further: I shall not trouble you much on that score; as it must be a matter of total indifference to you to know whether Martin Luther, when he died, as the Ro-

man Catholics assert, was drunk, and taken away by the Devil in a whirlwind\*; whether Mahomet went to Paradise, as it is said, on a Jack Ass; or whether the Popes take their flight there on broom-sticks. These things do not concern you. As for the present Pope, I sincerely wish him a happy and pleasant journey through the air on a broom-stick, or astride any thing else that he may choose to be mounted on; for, although the Papal power has certainly been gone to the Devil for some time past, I by no means wish his Holiness to follow it.

Ye lovely Cyprians, let me instruct you never to swear: it is not only sinful, but extremely vulgar. It is bad enough in a man, but in a woman it is shocking and

## L 3

\* A Cacadæmone sublatum fuisse,

disgusting. Therefore, when you wish to assert any thing with energy, on a Sunday you may say, May I never go to Heaven if such a thing be not true ! On week days, you may use the following expression : May I never enter a pair of sheets again ! On trivial occasions, you may swear by your chastity ; for which expression you cannot be ridiculed by the generality of modest women, as long as you live with one man, and intrigue only with half a dozen more.

I wish I could with propriety recommend modesty to you : but modesty is by no means suitable to your characters ; nor will it satisfy your wants, any more than a fat sheep would appease the hunger of a starving cow : moreover, I assure you that it is quite out of fashion, and totally exploded in the higher circles ; for



the blushing goddess has spread her wings, and taken her flight from their doors as well as from yours. Indeed there would be no harm or sin in swearing by Pharoah's Foot, by Aaron's Rod, by Moses's Beard, by Sampson's Nose, or Balaam's Ass; or you may cheat the Devil of an oath, as the Americans do, and say, Tarnation seize me, or swamp me, if I don't do this or that! But they are all vulgar expressions; therefore, attend, if you please, to the three forms I have recommended to you, as they are religious, affectionate, and chaste,

Economy in your house-keeping is absolutely necessary. Above all things, you should diligently attend to the method in which your servants are fed: if you do not, they will soon eat you out of house and home. Never permit them to take

cold meat, either at breakfast, luncheon, or dinner; for it is universally acknowledged, that one pound of hot meat will go nearly as far in a family as two pounds of cold, and particularly in summer. I know this myself from experience, that in the hot weather I can eat heartily of cold meat, when I cannot bring myself to taste hot; besides, three hot meals a-day will give your house-keeping the appearance of grandeur and liberality, and your purse will reap a considerable benefit. The cold victuals should be hashed up both at breakfast and luncheon in the frying-pan, with a plentiful quantity of suet and dripping, to make them relish it well. I will be bound they will not consume half as much meat in a day, as they otherwise would; and if they should, out of spite to you, eat heartily of these savoury

hashes, it will make them so sick that they will not be able to relish any meat whatever for two days at least, by which you will be a considerable gainer. You should also provide each of your servants with a pair of large spectacles, of the first magnifying quality, and never permit them to sit down to any meal without wearing them ; for they are as necessary, and as useful in your kitchen, as the pots, kettles, and spits. Glasses of such magnifying powers will make a lark appear as big as a fowl, a fowl as big as a full-grown cock turkey, ducks and geese as big as bustards and swans, a leg of mutton as large as a hind quarter of beef, turnips and potatoes of the size of melons and pumpkins, and a twopenny loaf as large as a quartern. And as philosophers assure us that pain even is only imaginary, we may justly

believe the same of hunger. Thus, if a servant, who eats no more than one pound of food, imagines, by the aid of these glasses, that he has eat three pounds, his hunger will be as fully satisfied, and he will rise from his meal contented; while you will have much less to pay your butcher, baker, and green grocer.

I do not think it would be amiss if you were to tell your servants, although you do not wish the world to know it, that you are of the Roman Catholic faith, and that, on account of your religion, you cannot permit any meat to come into your house on Fridays, Saturdays, and other fast days. Surely it will be no hardship for you to dine one day in the week on fish. Do but this, and display now and then a handsome cross on your breast, and have a stand made in that shape for

your parrot to perch on, they will implicitly believe you, and you will save two days meat in seven. Then consider what a wonderful deal of money you will save in Lent. Although I vow that I am a great advocate for all forms and ceremonies in religion, yet I would not have you think I am so rigidly scrupulous, absurd, and bigoted, as to imagine, that if a Catholic should take a fancy for half an ounce of meat on a Friday, or even eat a Welch rabbit in Lent, or that a Jew should partake of a pig's tail fried, which is a very delicate morsel, that either of them would be excluded from future happiness.

You may, I think, with propriety, establish one banyan day in the week in your family; and if the servants complain, tell them they are a set of impertinent

fellows and impudent husseys ; that the sailors, who are fighting for their country, and risking the dangers both of battle and shipwreck, have always one banyan day in the week, and are perfectly satisfied.

Although I have taken the greatest pains to instruct you how to conduct yourselves through life, as long as you continue votaries at the shrine of the goddess Cytherea, yet I should be wanting in attention to your future comfort, if I did not in some measure endeavour to instruct those of your cast who may be desirous of entering into the holy bands of matrimony, how to conduct themselves after they become wives. Your situation will be totally altered, for, in a Cyprian state, you are yourselves alone amenable to the laws of your country for bad con-



duct and misdemeanor: but, when married, the husband becomes responsible for the misbehaviour of his wife; therefore the law very justly gives him a power to correct her with calmness and moderation. But lest, from a brutal ferocity of passion, some men might coerce their wives with too much violence, a learned Judge, now no more, thought fit, in his wisdom, to make known the law relative to the size of the instrument with which a woman may be coerced, and solemnly declared that it should not be larger than a man's thumb.

Although the learned Judge, was not sanctioned in his opinion relative to the size of the instrument of coercion, yet the very first Law opinion in the country supports the legality of the punishment; I mean the celebrated Blackstone. I shall give

you a passage out of his Commentaries, which I hope will operate as a gentle hint to you, as it plainly shews you what power the laws of your country gives the husband over his wife, in cases of disobedience and misconduct.

Thus the learned Judge Blackstone writes in his Commentaries, vol. i. p. 444. "The husband also, by the old law, might give his wife moderate correction; for, as he is to answer for her misbehaviour, the law thought it reasonable to entrust him with this power of restraining her by domestic chastisement, in the same moderation that a man is allowed to correct his apprentices or children, for whom the master or parent is also liable, in some cases, to answer: but this power of correction was confined within reasonable bounds, and the

husband was prohibited from using any violence to his wife, *aliter quam ad verum ex causa regiminis et castigationis uxoris suæ licite et rationabiliter pertinet*. The civil law gave the husband the same, or a larger, authority over his wife ; allowing him, for some misdemeanors, *flagellis et fustibus acriter verberare uxorem* ; for others, only *modicam castigationem adhibere*."

As, from a defect of your education, you do not, ye lovely Fair, understand Latin, it is necessary you should be made acquainted with this point in law, as it materially concerns you. The sentence of "*flagellis et fustibus acriter verberare*," when the true sense of the words are taken, implies, that in some cases, where the crime the wife is guilty of exceeds a common misdemeanor, such as making him

a cuckold, spitting in his face, or breaking his head with a chamber-pot, (the latter of which, when fast asleep in bed, a friend of mine suffered from a most lovely and affectionate wife,) in such cases the law permits him to give her a sound horse-whipping, or to knock her down with his fist, and give her two black eyes and a bloody nose.

Take care, therefore, how you behave when you are permitted to partake of the blessings and sweets of holy matrimony, and remember I have given you an early warning. I must for myself candidly confess, that this law is particularly constituted to promote the mutual peace and happiness of the marriage state; as, from experience, I can testify, that in some families there would be no existing without it, so wonderful are its magic powers in

preserving peace and harmony between a fond wedded couple. Sometimes, even when the law is reversed, it has its salutary effects, as there should be good order preserved either by one party or the other. I confess it often gives me great satisfaction to reflect, that, whilst I carry in my hand an oaken shillelah, I am sanctioned by law in the use of it: for if the law permits a man to beat a tender delicate woman with a stick as big as his *thumb*, surely no law will punish me for beating a great, clumsy, overgrown, insolent rascal with a stout cudgel. In this there is a double propriety; and in using it I have ever considered myself as acting strictly according to the letter of the law, and sanctioned by the legislature: for the same reasons, I hold it lawful to horse-whip any person who has grossly insulted

me, and refuses to give satisfaction ; but as whaleing a gentleman from head to foot is but, at the best, a coarse and vulgar revenge, I think, to do the thing politely, it would be fully sufficient to ride up to him, crack your whip at him, and cry—Ware horse ! you son of a —— . The insult is just as great, and the labour less.

It is the duty of every man of honour to protect the fair sex, and even to risk his life in defence of their honour, happiness, and welfare. Every brave man will protect them from insult and injury, and will find a recompence, devoutly to be wished for, in their affections and confidence ; while he who tamely permits the wrongs they suffer to go unrevenged, will meet with his deserts—the hatred



and contempt of the loveliest part of human nature, for

None but the brave deserve the fair.

I must, however, confess, that you have no right to embroil us in your private quarrels one with another, though of this you are too often guilty. All private quarrels between woman and woman, I am of opinion, should be settled by you without our interference; and if things have gone to so great a length that they cannot be settled and accommodated both with honour and satisfaction to each party, I can see no reason why you should not decide the quarrel by sword and pistol, in the same manner as men do. A few duels would be of infinite service to the fair sex in general. It would prevent, in a considerable degree, your slandering and

traducing each other's characters so grossly as you now are accustomed with impunity to do. In all cases of love, when the green-eyed monster jealousy pervades your heart, you might call the rival enemy to the field, and, in single combat, openly and boldly seek revenge; a conduct by far more noble than having recourse to those base and underhanded means you now are so wont to take to be revenged of your rival or the object of your hatred. It would also, in a great degree, preserve your chastity; for many of you have spared no pains to draw off the affections of a man from the woman devoted to your hatred; and have even gone so far as to make a sacrifice of your persons to him, without the smallest affection, but for the sole motive of gratifying your revenge, by distracting and breaking the heart of the female you hate,

whose happiness was fixed on him. It would also prevent, in a very considerable degree, all cheating at cards, which, I am sorry to say, is too prevalent even in the highest female circles ; for if Lady Kitty should observe Lady Jenny cheating, she might kick her down stairs, and not let the company be disturbed any further with their broils and wrangling, but settle the affair the next morning in Hyde Park.

Many of you are also very quarrelsome in your cups, when bottles and glasses fly about as thick as grape-shot in an action, by which your lovely features are sometimes wounded and disfigured. Sword and pistol would materially correct these enormities, and many others which at present are too tedious to relate.

What gallant actions the newspapers would frequently announce ! as, for instance, “ Yesterday Mrs. C—— and Mrs. D——, two lovely high-spirited Cyprians of the first class, had each a desperate rencontre in Hyde Park : they received eight shots a-piece, but neither of them would give in : the Bow-street officers interfered, and took them before Mr. Justice Bond ; but no one appearing for their characters, and offering to bail them, but George Hanger, whose recognisance the magistrate would not accept, at the same time warning him to be careful of his own conduct, they were committed to the house of correction, and sentenced to *mill doll* \*. The Duke of —— and Lord —— appearing in their behalf next day,

\* For mill doll, vide the Dictionary of the Slang Language.

they were liberated, on finding security for their future good behaviour.”

Such paragraphs as the following would also enliven the dullness of newspapers:—

“ We are happy to inform the public, that the dispute between Mrs. —— and the Countess of ——, which originated at a division of the spoils of a Faro Bank, has been arranged, to the mutual satisfaction of both parties, by the interference of their friends. Mrs. —— made use of such gross reflections, that the Countess could no longer retain her anger, but pulled Mrs. ——’s wig off, and threw it behind the fire. The Countess has bought her a new jasey, and asked her pardon. The Countess’s coachman very kindly lent Mrs. —— his wig to go home with that night, to prevent her catching cold.”

“ It is with the greatest pleasure we announce to the numerous friends of Lady Dorothy Brown, that her Ladyship is declared out of danger from the *thrust* she received in the lower part of her stomach.”

“ We are happy in being informed, that the Countess of Bellebriggis is hourly recovering from the wounds she received in the last duel: her Ladyship has had seventeen different rencontres this winter. The wound has been diligently probed, but the balls have not yet been found, and the surgeons are of opinion that they did not enter.”

Much good, I am convinced, would be derived from women having recourse in their private quarrels to sword and pistol; and I trust the fair sex will take it into their consideration, and adopt it.



“Yesterday Lady Kitty, and the Countess of ———, met in Hyde Park, the former attended by Gen. Tarleton, the latter by Col. Hanger : at the first discharge, the Countess fainted, and fell into the Colonel’s arms. The General imagining the Countess to be killed, persuaded Lady Kitty instantly to make her escape. On the General’s attending the Countess, and her friend the Colonel assuring him she was not wounded, the General then called for water, and applied a bottle of salts to her nose ; but George Hanger, laughing at the General, said, “ He would be shot if he had not something better in his pocket, that would bring her to immediately !” Knowing the weakness of the Countess’s nerves, he very prudently had provided himself with a dram bottle, giving the Countess a sip or two, not of gin, which shortly recovered her, and she gallantly call-

ed for her second pistol. Lady Kitty having fled, prevented this affair from going greater lengths : it has since been arranged by the seconds, to the mutual honour of both parties. This unfortunate affair originated from Lady Kitty saying publicly, that if the Countess had called her an infamous scoundrel, she (the Countess) was an infamous rascal. Lady Kitty very properly apologized, and declared, that if the Countess did not intend to call her a scoundrel, she, Lady Kitty, did not intend to call the Countess a rascal. George Hanger was decidedly of opinion that they should be brought into the field again, and swore most manfully that he did not understand such logical apologies ; but neither party being very desirous of meeting again, the affair was terminated."

“ A very serious quarrel took place yesterday, at a private tea-drinking party, between Lady A——, and Lady B——. Lady A—— told Lady B——, that her husband was a cuckold and a nincompoop. Lady B—— did not seem to take the former abuse much in dudgeon, but she lost all temper on the supposition of the latter, and vowed most solemnly that whatever her husband might be, he was no nincompoop ; that it was insulting her delicacy and feeling in the highest degree, to let loose such a suggestion. From words they came to blows : in the contest, Lady B—— struck Lady A—— with the heel of her shoe, and broke the bridge of her nose. Lady B—— has since presented Lady A—— with a cane, which Lady A—— laid gently over her shoulder, which was judged a sufficient atonement for the injury her Ladyship

received on the projecting feature of the visage."

Ye lovely Cyprians, as you are eminently distinguished for your attachment to soldiers, any thing which will be instrumental to the advantage of the army, and to the honour and glory of our country, will, I flatter myself, meet with your patronage and approbation. Many people are of opinion, that there are as many shades of courage as of beauty; but I differ widely from them. All Britons are naturally brave, and I presume equally conspicuous for courage; nor do I believe that one single shy cock is to be found in the three kingdoms. Indeed, some few officers have been found in a ditch in action: but no suspicion of cowardice can be attached to such conduct; they were only wiser than the generality of their

comrades, for *discretion is allowed to be the better part of valour*. Indeed, though a man from his infancy be of a nervous habit of body, the moment he puts on a red coat, his whole frame is invigorated, and his heart steeled against the greatest dangers. This infallible nostrum for relaxed nerves, acts as effectually on the heart as a strengthening plaster to a relaxed limb, and is as efficacious to the human frame as firing and blistering to a horse; it braces, makes firm, and brings the nerves and heart to their natural vigour and tone. A glass or two of grog taken after a fatiguing march from Ealing to Acton, is as infallible a military nostrum to establish true courage, as Dr. Brodum's Balsam, and Dr. Godbold's Botanical Syrup, for the cure of asthmas and consumptions. But the common soldier is so stupid and wrong headed, that he cannot be brought to believe



the truth of this, though, to a man of common sense, it is as intelligible as the Popish creed. Nor can he be brought to place the same degree of confidence, when led to action, in a commanding officer who has not been exposed to danger, as in one who has seen active service.

As there are many of our generals, and by far the greatest number of field officers, who never saw a shot fired in anger in their lives; both for the satisfaction of the common soldier, and for the honour and interest of my country, I propose that every general and field officer, who has not seen active service before they be permitted to take upon them the command of a brigade or regiment, shall be commanded to walk backwards and forwards for one quarter of an hour behind a canvas screen, about eight feet high,



placed in front of a battalion of infantry, the men firing all the time as quick as possible at the cloth\*. The soldiers then will have confidence in the valour of their commanding officers. Another benefit to the country would be derived if these proposals were enforced: We should not then see so many gentlemen raise regiments, with no intention whatever to go with them, on active service, who now receive their pay and do nothing for it. By such wise regulations, all our generals and field officers would be men of tried valour, and those who would not submit to undergo the proof must resign and give up their pay; which would occasion a very great diminution in the army estimates.

\* This was written in 1798, long before the expedition to the Helder; all officers on that service are fairly exempted.

The Commissary Generals, Quarter-Master Generals, Barrack-Master Generals, Pay-Master Generals, and their deputies, should all be compelled to perform the same ceremony, as it is equally as satisfactory to the soldier to be fed, quartered, and paid by a brave man, as to be led to action by one. These gentlemen cannot possibly refuse so trifling a request, considering the great emoluments they gain by their places, as to be shot at for *one* quarter of an hour only during their whole lives, when the officer is liable to be shot at every week or day in the year. I should imagine that no man could be found so wanting to his own interest as to refuse being made permanent Commissary General, Quarter-Master General, or Barrack-Master General, on such easy terms. I forgot to mention that a ditch should be dug con-

tiguous to the screen, about eight feet deep, where the first class of the *Humane Society* of surgeons might attend. All those who are wounded might be permitted to roll into it; for it would not be fair to fire at them when they are down.

I must confess that I am a great advocate for the new pivot manœuvre, of wheeling backwards, from the facility of its being performed with such safety in all broken grounds, and especially in roads where the waggon ruts are deep, and in felled woods, where the stumps of trees are left standing, or where the roots of trees have been grubbed, and the holes not filled up.

Although the soldier performs this retrograde manœuvre with perfect ease and safety, and without ever tumbling down,

yet I am of opinion, if he were taught to dance, particularly all stage steps, it would be of great benefit to him; for nothing forms the limbs, or instructs a man to walk gracefully so well as dancing: besides, nothing is more effectual to teach a man to keep his mouth shut, and his ears and eyes open, which is so essential to perfect discipline and good order. I think the soldier might be taught to keep the step with greater precision in wheeling backward, if a sharp pointed iron peg, about one inch and a half long, was fixed in the heel of every soldier's shoe; then if any man should forget to step backwards with the proper leg, his comrade before him would be sure to pin his foot to the ground, which would enable the adjutant to find out the soldier who was to blame, that he might be sent to the drill to be perfected. At

present it is very difficult to observe what soldier is guilty of the irregularity; for although they often tread on one another's toes, and break their comrades shins, they bear the pain, however excruciating, with silence and wry faces.

“ Eyes right,” and “ Eyes left,” are fascinating and elegant words of command: the old fashioned expression, “ By the right dress,” “ By the left dress,” was vulgar and incomprehensible; besides, it has a charming effect on the soldier, for it not only teaches him regularity in his duty, but gives him an agreeable facility of squinting, which, when off duty, he can turn to his advantage, by being able with greater ease and grace to ogle the ladies.

I have hitherto endeavoured, as far as



it has been in my power, to connect my ideas, and arrange my advice for your future happiness, pleasure, and advantage, in order and method; but as affairs of consequence to myself will shortly engage my attention, and deprive me from giving up any more of that time, which, hitherto, I have with so much satisfaction devoted to your interest, and to the correction of the immorality and Jacobinism of the present age, I am compelled to give my further instructions to you, in an unconnected and irregular way, just as the ideas arise in my mind.

First of all, I entreat you, who may perchance have children, never to permit **them** to be christened at home in a punch bowl, or in one of Mr. Wedgwood's earthen utensils; though I know it to be fashionable amongst the great. Go you to



church with them; it is by far more decorous: as for myself, if I had twenty children, not one of them should be christened but in a river, as it was done of old.

I must confess, I am a great admirer of short waists and thin clothing: formerly, when the women wore strong stiff stays and cork rumps, you might as well sit with your arm round an oaken tree with the bark on, as round a lady's waist; but now, as you have seldom any more covering than your shift and gown of a cold day, your waist is extremely warm and comfortable to the feel. Besides, it is salutary to go thin clad, to let in the *ambient heat*. The loose attire of your petticoats and gown is not only graceful, but very convenient; it being equally appropriated to the utility of women of fashion, and women of no

fashion ; it being admirably constructed either for a young lady to conceal a big belly, or for a shop-lifter to hide a bale of goods. I will do you the justice to say, that in summer you go thin enough clad, as very few of you wear more than a shift, a thin linen petticoat, and a muslin gown : but in winter, the cold compels you to hide your shapes more than I can wish for your sakes, as I am desirous that your beauties should ever be displayed as far as decency will admit ; therefore, instead of wearing a dickey\*, which most of you very prudently do in winter, though it totally destroys the symmetry of your shape, I recommend you, in lieu of it, to wear a very thin oiled-silk petticoat of a sky-blue or flesh colour : this is the

\* A dickey is a short flannel petticoat, reaching down below the knee,

warmest attire you can put on, as no air whatever can penetrate it; and then it is so thin, that not a dimple or muscle can escape the eye. Some few of you who are most perfectly formed, may wear breeches, made to fit you to the greatest nicety, of flesh-colour oiled silk, and over which nothing but a thin muslin petticoat and gown, the transparency of which will shew your shapes to the greatest advantage, and then you will not be in danger of catching cold. I really am of opinion, that many of you have been guilty of an error, in leaving off false pads, especially all those who are deficient in respect to that without which no woman can claim any tolerable degree of perfection. They were useful and convenient in other respects; for, on a Sunday, you might carry your prayer-book in them

on one side, and one volume of my works on the other, to prevent your falling asleep in church-time, if the sermon should be very dull and long. A further benefit many of you who are ill-bred might derive from them; for, if you behaved so ill as to be kicked out of company, the *seat of honour* could receive no damage.

Elastic false bosoms are much in fashion; but they never as yet have been turned to proper advantage. An ingenious artist might so construct them, that you might conceal your love-letters in them; for your mothers are all acquainted with the old stale trick of tucking them under your garters, or in your shoe, and may search there for them. If they were made of a competent size, you might carry

your favourite squirrel in one of them, which would be a guard to you against immodest intruders.

Upon mature deliberation, I think the wigs now so much in fashion are the safest places to carry your *billet doux*; for, let your mother suspect you ever so much, she cannot be so rude as to pull your wig off in company, or even to discompose your *coiffeure*.

Fashionable and elegant expressions, when in public company, ye lovely Cyprians, are not only agreeable, but denote a good education, and shew that you have kept good company. Be mindful of the following, which you may apply as the conversation will admit you to bring them forward. "Patch," "What a bore," "That's the barber," "Go it,"



“The tippy and the twaddle,” “What a swell,” “Keep moving,” “All my eye, Betty Martin,” “Go along bob;” and above all things, never forget when asked any question which you do not choose to answer, to sell them a bargain.

Ye lovely Cyprians, Father Foigard, (with whom I agree,) says, “Receiving money before-hand is a bribe; but if afterwards taken, it is only a gratification,” Be, I pray you, mindful of his instructions.

There are many patents for the cure of smoky chimnies, I mean of houses, which are infallible; but it has hitherto puzzled the ingenuity of man to cure a natural smoky chimney. Cardamum comfits, mellifluous and odoriferous draughts, may for a few hours conceal the defect, but



it can never be for any time effectually prevented, but by cutting off the head, which, though rather a novel and dangerous operation, except performed by a very skilful artist, may be performed, and you may enjoy every faculty of nature except seeing, hearing, speaking, and smelling ; for the particulars of which I refer you to a book written by an ingenious acquaintance of mine\*.

Nothing sets a woman off so much, or makes her appear more graceful, than an elegant and dignified manner of walking : to plant the foot well, and turn your toes out, is the first of all accomplishments. Æneas knew his mother by the dignity of her walk, before she spoke to him ; *vera incessu patuit dea*. For

\* Doctor Kentish's Treatise on the Use of the Guillotine.

the divine majesty of woman is displayed in her very step. Nothing is more disgusting than to see a woman, let her be ever so handsome, hurrying on with her toes turned in, like a duck walking down a gutter in a thunder storm. You that are not naturally endowed with this happy accomplishment, should take a dancing master to teach you to walk gracefully ; though I think a drill sergeant is more capable of setting you well on your haunches. Besides, if you are militarily inclined, which is the rage amongst the ladies of the present day, he can instruct you in many useful evolutions ; can teach you the Indian way of fighting ; how the covered way may be attacked and defended, how to batter a breach, or storm a fortress, to draw the sword with skill, and to fire in all attitudes, without winking or blinking.

To please you, ye lovely Cyprians, I have purposely avoided the regular form of Latin grammar and syntax, which must have been extremely disgusting to you. All mood and figure work abounding with well-turned periods and priscan purities, resemble too much a Mosaic pavement and Dutch garden, all cut out in squares, and divided geometrically; the regularity of which is offensive to the eye.

The reader will distinguish as great capability in my writings, as the celebrated Mr. Brown expressed on viewing wild, irregular featured land, which was to be laid out in pleasure gardens\*. Besides, too

\* Mr. Brown, eminently distinguished for laying out and improving pleasure ground, when he found he could beautify a park or pleasure garden, said, "There was great capability in the ground." From which expression he acquired the nick-name of *Capability* Brown.

much attention to grammar would have so cramped my pen, I could not have written with any degree of pleasure or satisfaction. I freely confess, that it is as painful a task for me to write and speak grammatically, as it would be to study walking by the rules of equilibrium. I have often, ye lovely Cyprians, thought what infinite service and pleasure man would derive from being able to fly. As there are flying stage coaches, flying broad wheel waggons, flying artillery, and flying dillies, I am astonished that human ingenuity has not found out the art to enable man to fly, who is by so many hundred degrees lighter than the *above* machines, which all fly. I have often lamented that I was not born with wings. What service I could have rendered my country ! No admiral or general could have served without my assist-

ance ; and when the rivers are frozen, I could carry dispatches to and from the continent. But the greatest of all satisfactions and pleasures would be flying in at your windows, ye lovely Fair, in a dark night, unobserved. On mature reflection, I am inclined to think that very few of you, however, would be benefited by my flying abilities ; as from real charity and compassion I certainly should be induced to spend my time abroad, among the beautiful nuns in the convents, and the lovely fair Circassians locked up in the Eastern seraglios. Our women have opportunities enough of meeting their lovers, as you well know, while those unfortunate women have no one to sympathize in their distresses. Then, what a gallant and charitable exploit it would be, to fly away with one of the grand Turk's beautiful Circassian mistresses, carry her



home to her friends, pass a few days with her ; return and carry off another, and another, until the whole seraglio was cleared. This might be done by exercising precaution in my expeditions, and taking the advantage of a very dark night. The Mufti, when consulted by the enraged Sultaun, would for certain declare, that Mahomet had taken them into the third Heaven, and the father of the faithful would be satisfied.

Ye lovely Cyprians, I have ever submitted with the most perfect obedience to the laws of arrest in every shape, for two cogent reasons : first, for the sake of society, and also not without some degree of dread of entering into a correspondence with Thomas Tullis, Esq.\* for it would

\* The hangman, vulgarly called *Jack Ketch*.



not be very agreeable to be troubled even with one single *line* from that gentleman ; conscious that the wise, just, and pious legislators of our country could never suffer any law to exist, which they could not perfectly reconcile to their consciences, and which, when properly considered, was in the smallest degree oppressive. But, secondly, religious motives have induced me more implicitly to yield to law processes and expences for debt, as I find that the two great processes by which mankind is either stripped to his last coat and shirt, and every thing but what he has on his body, or is cast into prison, are both sanctioned by Scripture : for in reading St. Matthew, chap. v. verse the fortieth, you will find it written, “ And if any man will sue thee at the law and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.” This un-

deniably is an absolute sanction for *all actions at fieri facias*, which attach all goods and wearing apparel. Again, in Matthew, chap. v, verses 25th and 26th, we read, “ Agree with thine adversary (adversary certainly means an attorney) quickly whilst thou art in the way with him, lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.” Here again we find a positive sanction for all *cases which take the body in execution*. By the above texts from Scripture, you will plainly observe, that the law in these days acts as progressively, step by step, as in the days of St. Matthew ; for the lawyer (your adversary) first sends a bailiff to take you ; he locks you up in a spunging-house ; from thence you are committed to Newgate, which you may avoid, if you

can afford it, by being removed by Habeas Corpus to the King's Bench. In the first case, (*feri facias*,) I have been more than obedient to the letter of the Scriptural law; for, when the bailiffs came for my coat and cloak to my house, they also had my stockings, shoes, shirts, and breeches; to which I submitted with all humility; although it would have been very distressing to me, and a wonderful loss; for those very clothes would have been sold at public auction for a trifle when compared with their real value to me, as it would have cost me at least one hundred and fifty pounds to replace them, for a debt of forty-eight pounds; had they not perchance been given by the sheriff's officer to my friend Mr. Graham the auctioneer, who generously paid the money for me, and preserved my clothes; for pay the debt I absolutely could not at that time,

nor could I liquidate it for many months with my generous friend Graham. Here both the lawyer and Mr. Graham verified the Scriptures : but the world I trust will give the greater credit to the latter ; for the lawyer, when I was helpless, *took me in* ; but Mr. Graham, *when I was naked, clothed me*. I cannot help ; but with a considerable degree of satisfaction and pleasure, remarking the very moderate costs on this action of forty-eight pounds, they not amounting to much above one-half of the original debt, which I think I may say, and I am certain was a bill given by me for twenty-six or thirty pounds, not exceeding that sum ; for, in many suits that have been brought against me, I have often *paid costs, amounting to within a trifle of the absolute original debt* ; of which I have given the reader some authentic speci-

mens, where I have paid nearly *one hundred per cent.* costs of suit to the lawyer, and hardly ever less than *fifty per cent.*

What advantage is it to you, ye lovely Cyprians, if a man possesses the most transcendent abilities, and will not afford you his counsel and friendship? Mine are of a very inferior degree; but such as they are, I have given them to you spontaneously: nor have I made any conditions with you; yet, I must confess that it is not my intent to give you this advice gratis, nor have I pleaded your cause without a retaining fee: for I have long had the satisfaction of being the chamber counsel of many of you.

Let others plough the main in quest of



gold, and ransack India's burning soil in search of gems ; or brave the winged messenger of death, to grasp that phantom, Honour, in the tented field. My bark shall spread her swelling sails, and bear me to that happy isle, where reigns in loveliness attired the Paphian queen ; then will I bend the knee and sacrifice with her sportive nymphs on Cytherea's altar, and pay due homage to the Queen of Love ; for, to lovely woman, and nought but her on earth, will I pay homage.

Attentive as I have been to your interests in this world, yet I should be deficient in true regard to you, if I were to study only your temporal welfare and happiness. Life is but a span long ; but I have employed every ability I am master of, to render your short passage through a world fraught with misery, as com-



fortable as the nature of things will admit.

Now, it is my serious and solemn advice, for the sake of your immortal part, to let your leisure hours be devoted to the Tabernacle, where, with due attention to the salutary admonitions of the disciples of the pious Doctor Squintum, you may speedily be regenerated, be received as babes of grace, and admitted to those feasts of pure seraphic love, where none but the truly penitent are admitted; and you may then defy the cloven-footed gentleman and all his works. It is not my practice to calumniate any one; but you know it to be true that he is a very scurvy, rascally acquaintance, who, if you continue any connection with him, will not leave you a rag—no, not a single rag to your backs.

For the more speedy accomplishing your regeneration, you should pay attention also to the private lectures of the foot soldier in the guards, Swaddling John, and Captain Joyce, formerly a boatswain's mate on board a man of war; but, above all, I wish to draw your attention to the Work of the pious Doctor Huntington, intituled *Huntingdon's Bank of Faith*.

This pious divine was formerly a coal-heaver, afterwards a cobbler, then a gardener. The inferior situations in life that he occupied can be no disparagement to him in your minds, for poverty and obscurity were his only faults; yet, in the most painful distress, he never deserted the service in which he was engaged. Let me entreat you to attend to this pious man's Work, *his Bank of Faith*; walk

in the paths he has trodden, and have but the same faith which he tells you he ever had in the worst of times, and you will be sure to succeed and prosper. It will not be possible, then, you shall ever want either food, raiment, or any other necessary, to make this transitory life comfortable.

You will observe, in perusing the extracts which I shall select from this pious Christian's works, how his faith was rewarded ; for, although he never provided for his own sustenance or clothing, or that of his family or wife, and let the morrow ever provide for itself, the Power whom he served never failed to send him every requisite necessary for his support. When he was absolutely starving, he was suddenly furnished with partridges, rabbits, and money. When tired, he unexpectedly received a horse to ride on, and

at the same time a tailor appeared to measure him for a pair of leathern breeches to defend his posteriors from excoriation on horseback, when, in his zealous exertions to preach the word of God, he had worn out his worsted small clothes, and exposed his shameful parts, (to use an expression of Mr. Burke,) to the ridicule of the unholy multitude.

His pious wife also, when she wanted a dish of tea, and had no money to purchase it, had but to order the maid to boil the kettle, and, before the water was thoroughly warm, some ministering angel sent her tea: all this she acquired by having faith. Bemindful, ye amiable Cyprians, that without faith you can have no hopes, and with perfect faith every thing may be obtained, as this pious Mr. Huntingdon has gravely and gratefully informed us.

If you but possess the same inward feeling, you need not despair of receiving, from the same beneficent hands, beef, mutton, tea, petticoats, and gin, which you, of course, prefer to such a washy vaporous beverage as tea.

I shall now request your attention to the following extracts from this pious Christian's Works: I wish to imprint them on your minds, that you may know what benefits may be derived on earth from true faith. The truth and assertions of this pious man, this spiritual shepherd, who gathereth together the sheep who have wandered away from the sheepfold, and fed on the wormwood and rue of vice and ungodliness, instead of the clover and cinque-foil of holiness, cannot be doubted. I command you, therefore, ye lovely Cyprians—I command



you, by the sincere interest I take in your welfare, that you will not only study this pious man's Works, his Bank of Faith, but have faith—aye, and faith in him, and in every thing he relates ; for without it you cannot expect to be regenerated or saved.

*Extracts from Huntington's Bank of Faith.*

“ As the life of faith consists in bearing the cross of Christ, we must not expect to be long without trials.—Providence soon frowned on me again, and I got behind-hand as usual. This happened, too, at a time when my wife was lying-in, destitute of those necessities of life which are needful at such times.—The nurse came and told her there was no tea in the house.—My wife replied, ‘ Set the kettle on, if there is not.’—The nurse (whose name was Ann Webb, a daughter of mine in the faith, and the first soul



that God called by me) said, ‘ You have no tea, nor can you get any.’—My wife replied, ‘ Set on the kettle.’—She did so; and, before it boiled, a woman (with whom at that time we had no acquaintance) came to the door, and told the nurse that she had brought some tea as a present for my wife. Thus God, who shewed Moses a stick to sweeten the waters of Marah, sent a little tea to bitter the water in my dame’s kettle. Soon after my dame got over her lying in, tidings were brought to us that a gospel minister was coming down to Kingston to preach an evening lecture, and to break bread to the congregation. I had a great desire to go to the table, and also to have my child baptised at the same time: but, as I never could go from the Lord’s table without offering my mite, and at this time had no money in my pocket, I did not go. However, I begged of God to send me a little money, some way or other, for this purpose; which I verily believed he would. So I waited till within half an hour of the time to go, and

then began to think I should be disappointed: but, just as unbelief set me to murmuring and complaining, I heard a man ride up to my door as I was in my study at the back part of the house; and, when he rode away again, I called to my wife to get ready to go. ‘Get ready!’ said she, ‘why you know we have no money!’—‘Poh! poh!’ said I, ‘God has sent the money!’—And true enough it was that God had sent it; for all the business the man had with us was to give us some money! Surely it was God that sent him, and none else; for, if the hairs of our head are all numbered, we have reason to believe that our wants are; and if God keeps our hairs from falling to the ground, he certainly supplies our wants too. Thus the good God and Saviour, who made a fish produce money for an earthly tribute, sent the man with three shillings as an offering to God, and of his own we offered to him.” P. 73—75.

“My year being now expired, I wanted

a new parsonic livery ; wherefore, in humble prayer, I told my most blessed Lord and Master that my year was out, and my apparel bad—that I had no where to go for these things but to him ; and, as he had promised to give his servants food and raiment, I hoped he would fulfil his promise to me, though one of the worst of them. Seeing no immediate signs of my livery coming, I began to omit praying for it ; though God says, ‘ For all these things I will be inquired of by the house of Israel, that I may do these things for them.’ It fell out one day that I called on a poor man, who complained that he could not attend the word of God for want of apparel. This drove me to pray again for my new suit of clothes, that I might give my old ones to him. A few days after this I was desired to call at a gentleman’s house near London. Indeed it had been impressed on my mind for six weeks before, that God would use that gentleman as an instrument to furnish me with my next suit. And so it fell out ; for, when I called

on him, upon leaving his house he went a little way with me; and, while we were on the road, he said, ‘I think you want a new suit of clothes.’ I answered, ‘Yes, Sir, I do; and I know a poor man that would be very glad of this which I have on, if my Master would furnish me with another.’ When we parted, he desired me to call on him the next morning, which I accordingly did, when he sent a tailor into the room, and generously told me to be measured for what clothes I chose, and a great coat also. When I got the *new*, I furnished the poor man with my *old* suit. This was the fourth suit of apparel that my Master gave me in this providential manner, in answer to the prayer of faith. Thus God, who kept Israel’s clothes from waxing old, though in constant use for forty years, gave me a new suit every year.” P. 79, 80.

“I now preached at London, at Richmond, at Cobham, at Woking, at Worplesdon, and at Farnham in Surrey. This I

found too much for my strength. However, I continued for a considerable time, till at last I was generally laid up sick about once a month. I found I had great need of a horse; but feared I should not be able to keep it, if I had one. However, it happened that I had a very severe week's work to do; I was to go to Woking and preach on the Lord's day morning, to Worplesdon in the afternoon, and from thence to Farnham in the evening; to preach at Petworth in Sussex on the Monday, at Horsham on the Tuesday, at Margaret-street chapel on the Wednesday, and at Ditton on the Thursday, evening: but before I could reach Ditton on the Wednesday, I was so far spent that I thought I must have lain down on the road; yet, with much difficulty, I reached home, and then I had to go to London. Finding myself wholly unable to perform all this labour, I went to prayer, and besought God to give me more strength, less work, or a horse. I used my *prayers* as gunners use their *swivels*, turning them every way as



the various cases required. I then hired a horse to ride to town; and, when I came there, went to put him up at Mr. Jackson's livery-stables, near the chapel, in Margaret-street; but the ostler told me they had not room to take him in. I asked if his master was in the yard. He said, Yes. I desired to see him; and he told me he could not take the horse in. I was then going out of the yard, when he stepped after me, and asked if I was the person that preached at Margaret-street chapel. I told him I was. He burst into tears, saying, he would send one of his own horses out and take mine in; and informed me of his coming one night to hear me out of curiosity, because he had been informed that I had been a coal-heaver. He then told me that, under the first sermon, God shewed him the insufficiency of his own wretched righteousness—the carnality and hypocrisy of his religion—the true state of his soul—and the necessity of the spirit and grace of Christ Jesus the Lord to change his heart if ever he was saved; and



blessed God for sending me there. This was good news to me. He also said that some of my friends had been gathering money to buy me a horse, and that he gave something towards him. Directly after, I found the horse was bought and paid for; and one person gave me a guinea to buy a bridle, another gave me two whips, a third gave me somethings necessary for the stable, another trusted me for a saddle—and here was a full answer to my prayer: so I mounted my horse and rode home, and he turned out as good an animal as ever was rode. I believe this horse was the gift of God, because he tells me in his word that all the beasts of the forest are his, and so are the cattle on a thousand hills. I have often thought that, if my horse could have spoken, *he would have had more to say than Balaam's ass*; as he might have said, ‘*I am an answer to my master's prayers—I live by my master's faith, travel with mysteries, and suffer persecution, but I do not know for what.*’ P. 83—85.

“ Having now had my horse for some time, and riding a great deal every week, I soon wore my *breeches* out, as they were not fit to ride in. I hope the reader will excuse my mentioning the word *breeches*, which I should have avoided, had not this passage of scripture obtruded into my mind, just as I had resolved in my own thoughts not to mention this kind providence of God.—

‘ And thou shalt make them linen breeches to cover their nakedness; from the loins even unto the thighs shall they reach. And they shall be upon Aaron and upon his sons when they come into the tabernacle of the congregation, or when they come near unto the altar to minister in the holy place; that they bear not iniquity, and die. It shall be a statute for ever unto him and his seed after him.’ Exod. xxviii. 42, 43. By which, and three others, (namely, Ezek. xliv. 18; Lev. vi. 10; and Lev. xvi. 4.) I saw that it was no crime to mention the word *breeches*, nor the way in which God sent them to me; Aaron and his sons being clothed entirely

by Providence; and as God himself condescended to give orders what they should be made of, and how they should be cut. And I believe the same God ordered mine, as I trust it will appear in the following history.

“ The scripture tells us to call no man master, for one is our master, even Christ. I therefore told my most bountiful and ever-adored Master what I wanted; and he, who stripp'd Adam and Eve of their fig-leaved aprons, and made coats of skins and clothed them; and who clothes the grass of the field, which to-day is and to-morrow is cast into the oven; must clothe us, or we shall soon go naked:—and so Israel found it, when God took away his wool and his flax, which he gave to cover their nakedness, and which they prepared for Baal; for which iniquity were their skirts discovered, and their heels made bare. Jer. xiii. 22.

*“ I often made very free in my prayers with my invaluable Master for this favour;*

but he still kept me so amazingly poor that I could not get them at any rate. At last I was determined to go to a friend of mine at Kingston, who is of that branch of business, to bespeak a pair, and to get him to trust me until my Master sent me money to pay him. I was that day going to London, fully determined to bespeak them as I rode through the town. However, when I passed the shop, I forgot it; but when I came to London, I called on Mr. Croucher, a shoemaker in Shepherd's Market, who told me a parcel was left there for me, but what it was he knew not. I opened it, and behold there was a pair of *leather breeches*, with a note in them! the substance of which was, to the best of my remembrance, as follows:

‘ Sir,

‘ I have sent you a pair of breeches, and hope they will fit. I beg your acceptance of them; and if they want any alteration, leave in a note what the alteration is, and I will call in a few days and alter them.

J. S.’

“ I tried them on, and they fitted as well as if I had been measured for them : at which I was amazed, having never been measured by any leather breeches-maker in London. I wrote an answer to the note, to this effect :

‘ Sir,

‘ I received your present, and thank you for it. I was going to order a pair of leather breeches to be made, because I did not know till now that my Master had bespoke them of you. They fit very well, which fully convinces me that the same God, who moved thy heart to give, guided thy hand to cut ; because he perfectly knows my size, having clothed me in a miraculous manner for near five years. When you are in trouble, Sir, I hope you will tell my Master of this, and what you have done for me, and he will repay you with honour.’

“ This is as near as I am able to relate it ; and I added,

‘ I cannot make out *I. S.* unless I put *I*



for *Israelite indeed*, and *S.* for *Sincerity*; because you did not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do.'

"About that time twelvemonth I got another pair of breeches in the same extraordinary manner, without my ever being measured for them." P. 85—88.

"One providence I had almost forgot. We were at that time very badly off for beds and bedding; my children were no better provided than the Saviour when he laid in a manger, for they slept upon bags of hay: but prayer at a long run brought in these things also. Some of my most intimate acquaintances knew how I was tried in this respect, though I never made it known to any body who was capable of helping me out of my trouble. But one night, after I had done preaching at Richmond, a person invited me home to his house, and shewed me a large bundle tied up, saying it was for me. I asked who the donor was; he replied,



‘ You are not to know that.’ I carried it home, when, lo! it proved to be bedding, and the very things I stood so much in need of!” P. 91.

“ Perceiving that the Lord approved of a bold, though not of a presumptuous beggar, agreeable to his word, ‘ Let us come boldly unto the throne of grace,’ &c. I boldly asked him the favour, and persevered in it, until I was one day informed by a friend that four or five pious people were coming on such a day from London to visit me. Then my faith told me I should soon have the bed. Accordingly they came, and we had some comfortable conversation together. Toward evening they departed, giving me four guineas. O! what Christian in his right mind would murmur and complain at his poverty, when, with a watchful eye, he sees such liberal supplies poured forth from the inexhaustible stores of Providence! Thus God, who provided a comfortable lodging for Elisha the prophet, provided me ‘ a bed, a

table, a stool, and a candlestick.' 2 Kings iv. 10.

“ I was determined to keep this money for a bed ; and therefore went to a good man in London, and bespoke one ; which he very soon sent me, with a rug also, and a pair of very good blankets. Soon after I called to pay him for it ; when he told me to pay his clerk, who gave me a receipt for the same ; but afterwards the gentleman went a little way with me, and at his departure gave me all the money back again. How sweet are temporal mercies, when received by those who are under the influence of grace ! when they are seen to come from a covenant with God and Father, in answer to the simple prayer of faith.” P. 92, 93.

“ But when I got about half over the common, it came suddenly into my mind to go out of the horse-road into a little narrow track, which leads over the hills, between the Hand-post and the Bath-house. I

could gain but very little ground by this, nor do I remember that I had ever gone that way before ; but I soon found what this impression meant ; for there was to be a battle fought between a stoat, or weasel, and a large rabbit. The stoat, or weasel, was to fight the battle and to win the field, and I was to take the prey. So I took up my rabbit, and gladly carried him home ; and it proved as fine a one as I ever saw, being quite in season, in every sense of the word, for we had nothing but bread in the house.

“ This occurrence happened before I received the horse. But I cannot recollect every circumstance so as to range it in its proper place, my memory being naturally bad. I lived in this manner for seven or eight years together, and every day afforded some providence or trial.

“ My dame about this time was pregnant, and not far from her lying-in. She gave me a large catalogue of the necessaries that she

should want against that time. I told her I had no money, nor was there any signs of my having any, and we could not get them without. She went on in suspense this way, till she expected her time every day, and began at last to fret amazingly. I told her I thought that God tried her thus, because she was remiss in the blessed privilege of private prayer. I also remarked to her, that God would be inquired of by us, that he might do these things for us, and that, if she did not pray for them, she was not like to have them. I believe this drove my dame to prayer; for soon after this there was a parcel sent from Lambeth, another from Kingston, another from Richmond, and a few things from some neighbours nearer home. I now asked the old woman if she thought she had got enough. She replied, ‘Yes, and more than enough.’—God had exceeded all her desires; for she had feared that she should not get money to buy the stuff to make up her little things; and that, if she did get it, it would have been so late that she should not have

had time to make them: 'but God,' said she, 'has sent them ready-made.' So Mary was very well pleased, and richly supplied.— And I think, for three or four births successively, the Almighty raised up one Dorcas here, and another there, to provide for my dame against her lying-in." P. 110, 111.

"At another time, when Providence had been exercising my faith and patience till the cupboard was quite empty, in answer to simple prayer he sent one of the largest hams that I ever saw. Indeed I saw clearly that I had nothing to do but to pray, to study, and to preach; for God took care for me, and my family also, agreeable to his own promise." P. 125.

"After I had preached there a few times, it came to pass one evening, when I had finished my sermon, that a person came to inform me that a woman (who was lately taken very ill, and was apparently near death) desired to see me. I accordingly



went; and, when I came to her bedside, asked her if she had sent for me. She replied, ‘ Yes.’ I asked her what she had sent for me to do. She said, to pray by her. I asked her what I was to pray for—that she might be raised up again? She replied, ‘ No; pray God to give resignation to his will, and that he may not depart from me.’ I asked her if she was sure the Lord was with her. She said, ‘ Yes.’ She now gave me a very sweet account of the operations of the Holy Ghost, and of the precious liberty which he proclaimed by the revelation and application of Christ crucified to her understanding, mind, and conscience. These tidings made my bowels yearn. O! the conversion of such souls are greater riches to me than all the treasures of Egypt! God in mercy soon after raised her up again; and she attended my ministry for about two years, appearing a most amiable Christian. She always sat with her head down, and heard me with all the attention imaginable; and, when *she had got her portion*, like Han-



nah, she would set off without either looking or speaking to any body, as if she suspected every one that spoke to her to be a robber of her conscience. Indeed *she was no bastard*—she was *my own daughter*—she loved a private religion, that lay between Christ crucified and her own conscience; and I believe she kept her day-book very strictly. Her name is Stuart. I dearly loved her *soul in the bowels* of Christ, as *I had begotten* her, and had sorely travailed for her.” P. 143—145.

“ A good gentleman, with whom I had but little acquaintance, and of whom I bought a load of timber, sent it me in with a bill and receipt in full, as a present to the Chapel of Providence.—Another good man came with tears in his eyes, and blessed me, and desired to paint my pulpit, desk, &c. as a present to the chapel.—Another person gave half a dozen chairs for the vestry; and my friends, Mr. and Mrs. Lyon, furnished me with a tea-chest well stored, and a set of

china.—My good friends Mr. and Mrs. Smith furnished me with a very handsome bed, bedstead, and all its furniture and necessities, that I might not be under the necessity of walking home in the cold winter nights.—A daughter of mine in the faith gave me a looking-glass for my chapel study.—Another friend gave me my pulpit-cushion, and a book-case for my study.—Another gave me a book-case for the vestry.—And my good friend Mr. E. seemed to level all his displeasure at the devil; for he was in hopes I should be enabled, through the gracious arm of the Lord, to cut Rahab in pieces; therefore he furnished me with a sword of the Spirit—a new Bible, with Morocco binding and silver clasps.” P. 148, 149.

“ However, the Almighty condescended to stop the rapid spreading of this disease by a singular circumstance. I received the following note from an unknown friend :

‘ Mr. Anti-Arminius’s free-grace love to

Mr. Huntington, begs his acceptance of a dish of dead men's brains; he believes most of them are of the evangelical family: they will be with him in a day or two: he is desired to ask no questions of the bearers.

*' Dead-man's Place,' &c.*

“ What these dead men's brains were, I could not conjecture; but suspected something to be sent by way of contempt, as the doctrines which God hath taught me are point blank against Arminianism. Howbeit, in a day or two the dead men's brains arrived in a very large packing-case, brought by two chairmen; which I at first refused to take in, suspecting an Arminian cheat; however, I opened the wooden scull, examined the brains, and found them to be three or four hundred volumes of divinity, geography, history, &c.

“ A few days afterwards he was pleased to send me another dish of brains, or a second course; which he informed me, by

note, consisted of some good and some bad ; and so I found them : for, among others, were the tracts of the irreverent Dr. Priestley, clothed in a suit of red Morocco embroidered with gold. I had not read much of him before his priestly craft greatly disgusted me. I stripped him out of his coat of many colours, and served it as, I think, Christ will serve the author ; that is, I cut it asunder, and appointed it a portion in the fire, as the Lord will do with all hypocrites and unbelievers. I confess I was much displeased to find some precious old authors, who were administering comfort to the people of God, with nothing but a sheep's-skin jacket about them ; while the Doctor, that sworn enemy to the God of armies, (busy in undermining and destroying that comfort,) was strutting about with an embroidered uniform ! ' Ah, Doctor ! ' thought I, ' I will put this scarlet suit on one of these old warriors who have been good soldiers of Jesus Christ ; they shall walk in embroidery, for they are worthy.' There were a few more

sly hypocrites crept in among them, to whom I gave house-room until I found them out, when I sent them bag and baggage after the Doctor." P. 157, 158.

" Reader, I could have mentioned many more blessings which came to me in a way of providence; but as I have recited, perhaps, too many of them already, I have here given thee only a few fathoms of heavenly meditation, with which the God of all grace enabled me to sound this mystery in a fit of sickness that befell me at Thames Ditton. Then it was that I received the greatest part of this consistent chain; the links of which kept every faculty of my soul, and every thought of my heart, so delighted and entertained, that I sat down a most willing, submissive, and delighted captive, at the foot of my prevailing lover and almighty conqueror." P. 172.

---

The above extracts, which I have taken from the righteous book, writ-



ten by that pious coal-heaver, cobbler, and divine, Doctor Huntington, intitled, *Huntington's Bank of Faith*, I most cordially recommend to your attention, ye lovely Cyprians! By them you will be taught how to wrestle with Heaven; but remember, you must use your *prayers* as gunners use their *swivels*\*, turning them every way as your various cases require, or they will have but little effect; and you must positively leave off dancing, for that, he informs you, in page 27 and 28 of his pious book, "is just as serviceable a net to ruin souls as devils could invent." Observe, when you pray for any thing in which you are considerably interested, that you go under a hedge to pray, cut a stick half through, bend it

\* Vide Huntington's expressions, page 83, in his *Bank of Faith*.



down, come back, look at it, and praise God if the favour you ask is granted. At another time you must go into your tool-house in the garden, and wrestle hard with God. This pious man never prayed for any thing but he informs you the Lord sent it him. The Lord killed carps, eels, partridges and rabbits for him, to feed his children with. When he had nothing left to eat, nor any money to buy any victuals, the Lord took away his appetite for three or four days. And at another time, when he knew there was no food in the house, he looked in the cupboard, and found that his heavenly master had sent him a large ham. His prayers are so substantially efficacious, that whatever he requests by prayer is sent him; not only clothes of every sort for him and his wife, but even the minutest articles of life, such as bedding, stools, candlesticks,

whips, looking-glasses, tables, tea, sugar, &c. &c. But, above all, I charge you, ye lovely Cyprians! be mindful how he got his leathern *breeches*, as it must give you great satisfaction. If you can be as well fitted for a pair as this pious coal-heaver, cobbler, and divine was, without any tailor taking measure of you, your modesty will never be put to the blush. Now I cannot see any reason whatever why you should not obtain all the various benefits, gifts, and advantages which were granted to this pious coal-heaver and cobbler, provided you have equal faith with him; for without faith nothing is to be obtained.

I have given you, ye lovely Cyprians, every instruction in my power for the happiness of your souls and bodies in this world; and, to secure it in both instances, you cannot do better than follow

the precepts laid down by this righteous coal-heaver and cobbler, in his book intitled, *Huntington's Bank of Faith*. If you, ye lovely Cyprians, have but equal faith with this pious man, every thing in life, that you can possibly desire to have, you are plainly shewn how to obtain, excepting gin; and as I do not recollect, in any part of this enlightened and pious work, mention being made of his ever having obtained that wholesome liquor either by faith or prayer, I confess I am at a loss how to instruct you relative to the acquiring of this liquor, except by purchase. However, should you, by the means which he employed, obtain a superfluity of clothes, our father's brother\* will always indulge you with the loan of a trifle on a pledge; and as this liquor is so salutary

Q 4

\* Our uncle.

and conducive to your health as well as to your happiness, every exertion must be used to obtain it ; therefore, mind the directions this pious man gives how you are to obtain any thing you most ardently wish for : be mindful, then, to *wrestle* hard, and turn your *prayers* in every direction as *gunners* turn their *swivels*. This direction, strictly observed, will, when you are once brought to believe it, obtain every thing you wish an—excellent and useful endowment which this pious coal-heaver and cobbler was blessed with ; and if you, ye lovely Cyprians, can but arrive at the same proficiency, you will find it of the greatest advantage. It will prevent your passing many unhappy hours when the green-eye'd monster inflames your heart. Whenever this pious man's wife went to glean in the harvest-fields, not informing him by any means

which way she intended to go, his piety taught him to go directly straight to the place where she was; which was equally the same, he informs you, whether she had gone north, south, east, or west. Now, if, by faith, wrestling hard, and throwing your prayers in every direction as gunners turn their swivels, and by leaving off dancing, (for that he positively forbids as a deadly sin,) you can arrive at the same perfection in finding any person you immediately wish to see, you will be the happiest mortals on earth; for, if the captain or your flash-man should ever go astray, you will immediately know on what part of the town to dash after him, and be enabled to take vengeance on your rival's countenance. If you find him paying his court to another female, the *gay deceiver* can have nothing to plead in excuse,

and you will get rid of a gentleman who, at the best of times, is but a troublesome guest. Make yourselves, therefore, I entreat you, perfect mistresses of this pious man's writings, and tread in his paths with unerring attention: after which you may study two other pious Works, *Bunyan's Shove to a Heavy-breeched Christian*, and *Heaven taken by Storm by a Repentant Sinner*; with the assistance of these two, in addition to the pious Huntington's Bank of Faith, you must shortly get into the high road to heaven, from which if you ever wander, "the devil himself (to use his expression) must be within your bodies, and Rahab have full possession of your soul."

Be mindful that you constantly frequent the Tabernacle, in preference to the Church of your established religion, and in



preference to the rational sermons preached by bishops, deans, and other dignified clergymen of the established Church of England: seek far and wide the pious and instructive harangues of the following enlightened and righteous men, who all serve in the bowels of Christ \*, whether they deliver their pious instructions and exhortations to repentance and faith either in tub or pulpit, in tabernacle, or in the high-ways, in a cart, or from an hay-cock:

|                    |                        |
|--------------------|------------------------|
| Rev. Mr. Norman,   | Dealer in old clothes. |
| Mr. Wilson,        | Grinder.               |
| Mr. Timothy Hands, | Sheep's head seller.   |
| Mr. Sanders,       | Coach-painter.         |
| Mr. Godston,       | Pressman.              |
| Mr. O——,           | Mangle-maker.          |
| Mr. Downes,        | Glazier.               |
| Mr. Hiskup,        | Footman to T. G. Esq.  |

---

\* Vide Huntington's Subscription to the Dedication of his Bank of Faith,

Rev. Mr. Stanton,

{ Tooth-drawer, periwig-  
maker, and phleboto-  
mist.

Mr. Party,

Breeches-maker.

The wisdom, science, education, and learning of the clergy of our established Church, can by no means be put in competition with the superior talents and abilities of the above-named pious, learned, and scientific disciples of Methodism\*, who, to use the pious Huntington's expressions, serve in the bowels of Christ; for they, as the righteous coal-heaver and cobbler mentions, can fill you with as much religion as you can well carry away; and besides, can teach you also how to bar-

\* The above are the names and professions selected out of 397 persons who took out sixpenny preaching-licences, at the Session-house, Clerkenwell, in the year 1796-7, taken from *The Rise and Dissolution of the Infidel Societies*. By W. Hamilton Reid.

ter in old clothes, to grind, to deal in sheep's heads (commonly called Field-lane ducks), to paint a coach, to press, to mangle, to mend windows, to wait at table and at tea, to draw teeth, make periwigs, and bleed, and to make breeches. Pardon me, ye lovely Cyprians! for using the word breeches: and it is my duty, having the example set me by the pious Huntington, to apologize for using that indelicate word; I ought to have said—inexpressibles. Now all these accomplishments you may turn considerably to your advantage in life: I conjure you, therefore, attend strictly to these enlightened, pious, and learned preachers.

Having performed my duty to you, ye lovely Cyprians, in endeavouring to provide for all the happiness of which your

natures are really susceptible, I am of opinion that I cannot express myself more to your satisfaction, or to my own, especially as I have lately commenced the trade of coal-merchant, than by adapting the words of the super-excellent Huntington, which are attached to the Dedication of his Bank of Faith. "I thank thee, Christian; but beseech thee not to put any titles or compliments upon me: give them to those who can make a meal of them.—Coal-heaving is hard work; and coal-heavers, and, I might add, coal-merchants, require better food than fine speeches, windy words, and airy compliments.

For the pains I have taken to correct the immorality and Jacobinism of the age, I trust the bishops (as a reward for

my laudable endeavours to promote religion, strengthen the Christian faith, and suppress immorality,) will at least order 1000 copies of this work to be purchased, and distributed amongst the poor clergy, who cannot afford, though ever so desirous, of purchasing a book so fraught with morality and the purest precepts.

And you, ye lovely Cyprians, and fair sex in general, will, I trust, be liberal in your recommendations of these volumes, after the pains I have taken to instruct you how to practise the cardinal virtues, and the attention I have paid not only to the happiness of your bodies in this life, but to the peace of your souls in another to come; together with the attention I have manifested to your health, in recommending a general and constant use of that wholesome and cheap beverage called gin. If certain ladies of fashion will but lay

aside their cordial stomachic strong waters for plain gin, by which their healths will be benefited, and the lovely Cyprians will leave off drinking brandy, rum, raspberry, and cherry-bounce, and stick to royal gin, and gin only, so *peculiarly* salutary to *their* health, it is reasonable to expect that the consumption of that liquor will increase at least one-third—then I trust I shall experience more gratitude from the distillers of that liquor. than my friend Dr. Moseley has from the West-India planters and merchants for having published those excellent treatises on the salubrity and utility of coffee and sugar, which has been productive of such advantages to their trade as to increase the consumption in a very considerable degree \*. For the truth of this I appeal to

\* Three treatises published by Dr. Moseley, namely, Moseley on Tropical Diseases; Moseley on Coffee.



the historian of the West Indies, Bryan Edwards. But great men, when their turn is served, think but little of us inferior mortals.

fee; and Moseley on Sugar—not only shew the extensive professional knowledge of the physician, but the philosophy, the philanthropy, and erudition of the scholar, and the urbanity of the gentleman.

The history of the United States  
from 1776 to 1876. H. W. Henshaw  
1876

## CHAPTER III.

*On the Misery and Wretchedness of  
Female Prostitution.*

I AM extremely desirous that all persons who read this particular Chapter, should be acquainted with the real motives which have induced me to write it ; and I trust and believe that they will favour them with their approbation.

Among the modern, new-fangled, and soi-disant philosophers of the present age, lost in longevity and putrified in matter, one of whom tells us that no man could die if the mind was not prejudiced by the fear of death, which makes him incapable of the *necessary degree of volition*

*to live.* I own I do not understand, in this sense, the meaning of the word *volition*. He might, in my humble opinion, as well talk of the air balloon of life as the volition of life, which nought but the Almighty can give and take away.

Another of these wretched animals and idiot blasphemers, whom it is degradation to mention, who draws the breath of life, and dares to assert, that if there be such a *thing* as what is *called God*, it can be *only matter* \*.

These men, by arrogating to themselves a knowledge which can belong only to the Supreme Being, who made this world

\* Know then thyself, presume not God to scan,

The proper study of mankind is man.

and every thing in it \*, have, I am sorry to say, induced some unthinking persons to doubt the validity of certain points in religion † which constitute our chief happiness in this world, and can alone conduct us to happiness hereafter. Religion, now-a-days, is much out of fashion. But I confess I am not ashamed to own that I am old-fashioned enough to have some religion in me, and glory in an ardent, unshaken belief in God. Yet at the same time that I view the atheist with abhorrence ‡, I despise the superstitious bigot.

\* Who knows but he, whose hand the lightning  
forms,

Who heaves Old Ocean, and who wings the  
storms.

† Reason, to think of God when she pretends,  
Begins a censor, an adorer ends.

‡ I never heard of one of these men who had ridiculed every thing serious, when on their death-bed,

I have read the Works of these half-enlightened exotic philosophers, who spring up from the fæces of human corruption, are bred in the hot-bed of atheism, and are fostered by wickedness and depravity; these Ark-wright, literary, spinning jennies, who spend their time in spreading cobwebs to catch the wavering flies; these turnspits, who, in the metaphysical wheel, turn the spit of conjecture, while they emit the fumes of a distempered imagination, and the vapours of a sickly brain;—who think that they have travelled far in philosophy; but, like the dog in the wheel, end where they began. They have not brought me over to their no-faith, nor have they, in the slightest degree, shaken my belief.

and apprised of their approaching dissolution, who did not make a *watery* end.



Stronger toils must they spread to entangle me. The little finger of common sense, by one single movement, wipes away such cobweb films, which for an instant may dazzle, but never can blind the true and perfect vision.

If one of these men were to ask me how I know that there is a God, I would give him for answer the words of the poor ignorant Arab of the desert; who, when asked that question by one of these metaphysical turnspits in philosophy, replied, "In the same way that I am able to tell, by the print impressed on the sand, whether it was a man or a beast which had passed that way." I should like to be informed by one of these philosophers, what confines the sun between the tropics. It is not to be accounted for by any philosophical hypo-

thesis. He who walks daily in the great temple of Nature, and contemplates her wondrous works, wants no assistance to assure him of the existence of a Creator: his wondrous works all nature proclaims aloud; it is conspicuous to every one, and is known even to the blind; for, though deprived of sight, they feel the warmth of the sun; and the untutored Indian sees God in the clouds, and hears him in the winds. We cannot even draw our breath without conviction. How fated to misery is that nation, governed by a king, who fears not a future state of remuneration! there is hardly any excess, cruelty, or oppression, of which he may not be guilty.

It is not possible to keep society together without religion: such is my irrevocable opinion. But I certainly am no

bigot : and I have ever thought that there is a wide difference between priestcraft and religion. Nor does any one see the folly of superstition in a more ridiculous point of view than myself. Nor am I one of those hypocritical psalm-singing repentants, who, conscious of the infamies they have committed in their more early days, think for certain, that, to insure their future and eternal happiness, it is necessary to set apart so many hours in the day to prayer and hymning. One self-approving hour far outweighs whole years of Tabernacle prayer and Tabernacle praise.

The *mens conscia recti* is a surer guide to happiness hereafter, than all the formularies that have ever been established. I know the use and the necessity of public

worship; but the daily attendance at a parish-church will be of little avail; both for this world and that which is to come; if we do not contrive to establish a chapel of ease in our own breast. There I learn, from the preachings of Conscience, an heavenly-gifted orator, ordained to its holy work by God himself; that it is my duty, as it is my inclination, to support and plead the cause of seduced, deserted, and miserable woman.

Is there a man so base and so unfeeling, who walks the streets of this metropolis at late hours, without feeling the utmost pity and compassion for the miserable objects whom they behold taking up their night's lodging on some dunghill, or under gateways, waiting for the early opening in the morn of some noxious

gin-shop, their sole and only residence or abode, whilst the vile seducer, at that moment, revels in every luxury of life?

Amongst the lower order of people, though highly culpable, yet the seducing a virgin, and turning her adrift on the wide world without any maintenance whatever, and absolutely compelling her to prostitute herself in the public streets to satisfy the calls of hunger, is more easy to be accounted for : but in respect to the gentleman of education and fortune, there is no palliation or the smallest excuse for the crime, and the infamy is increased an hundred fold. Yet, how many women do I know, who have been seduced by such men, and prevailed on to quit their parents and desert an hospitable home, with every assurance of the tenderest regard and protection ! Some have not, to my know-



ledge, even scrupled to offer matrimony to accomplish their treacherous designs—that nuptial bait so calculated to lead a fond and doating woman to the arms of the seducer: yet, after all, and every promise of the most tender and sacred nature, they have taken the lovely all-credulous fair one to some common brothel, where, after having gratified their barbarous passion, they have left her to the power of a mercenary, unrelenting, infernal procurress: she is soon brought in debt to the Lady Abbess, who threatens to send her to prison, or to turn her into the streets, unless she consents to her infamous designs. To her parents she cannot return. Deserted by the man on whom she has placed her affections, and in whom she had reposed the utmost confidence, she has no alternative: a prison, famine, or prostitution await her. Of these three



cruel evils, the wretched being chooses that which appears to her, to be the least ; and nought remains for her but to become the victim of despair, or to seek for refuge from the pangs of her bosom, in a life of profligacy and intemperance : painful disease, and confirmed depravity, too often close the scene. Some few, before they arrive at this miserable situation, have found protecting friends, who have provided them with a comfortable home, and restored them to comparative happiness : but, after all, they are but few indeed, when compared with the thousands, who sink by degrees into the lowest gulph of prostitution and infamy. Alas ! how many of those who have rolled along the streets of London in their elegant equipage, who have been decked in golden array, and were finest at every fine show, have

closed their short lives in a workhouse or an hospital!

Can any man professing Christian morality, or even professing nothing more than the character of a gentleman, reconcile such deeds to his mind? Is there a man so unfeeling, so destitute of principle, as to enjoy one moment's sound repose on his pillow, when he reflects that some poor, wretched female, once fair and beautiful, though now no longer an object of desire, is reduced to the most miserable condition, by his base seduction and perjured vows? Perhaps she has not a bed of straw on which to repose her weak and weary limbs. Destitute of food, with scarce a garment to protect her from the piercing cold, and courting the lust of the lowest vagabond or midnight robber for

a momentary subsistence, it is her final allotment to curse her seducer and to die. Yet such men there are, who dare to walk the streets in open day, and arrogate to themselves the character of men of honour and of gentlemen ; nay more, would attempt to cut the throat of any one who even suspects them of a contrary conduct. Monster ! for man thou art not, if perchance thou shouldst cast thine eye on these pages, thou perjured, base, and infamous wretch, I hurl my contempt and execration at thee ! But you deserve much more from the injured fair one ; vengeance, nay death, inflicted by her hand, would be but a just atonement for her sufferings ; and were she to stab thee to the heart, and give freedom to thy soul to quit its cursed abode, and fly thy base, inhuman trunk, it is no more than thou

mightest expect, though it would be a punishment inadequate to thy crime.

To prove, therefore, that you have, in reality, some spark of honour, some sense of crime, hasten, ere it be too late, to atone, by future charity and kindness, for thy past offence. Go, seek the deserted fair one far and wide, whom thou hast seduced and forsaken, and, by a generous conduct in future, make all the satisfaction in thy power for thy horrid infamy. But if thy cankered heart is hardened in misdeed, go, boast the number thou hast debauched and abandoned, and sacrifice fresh victims to thy infernal passions. But know, that injured virtue will be avenged; another world has its punishments prepared for wretches such as thou art. Satan, at thy entry into his dominions, shall

pay thee homage ; while the inferior demons shall greet thee with the fraternal kiss, and make thee partakers of their destiny. Be not troubled with any alarm at the posthumous reproaches of this world after death ; I will insure thee the praises of posterity. Half a dozen seven-shilling pieces shall purchase thee as many paragraphs in the public papers, which shall hold thee up to the admiring multitude as a paragon of virtue, and an example for the age in which thou hast lived ; and who will dare to contradict the assertions of those authentic, candid, and impartial repositories of the current events of the world ?

But what am I writing ? If your heart is so hardened, if you are so lost to all sensibility of what is truly honourable in the human character, you will laugh at



the opinion of the world : and if, in a moment of returning virtue, you should repair, to the utmost of your power, the wrongs which you have done, you will secure the favour of all those whose approval is honour, and whose friendship is happiness. To err is in the nature of man, but to persevere in error, in spite of the dictates of honour, the suggestions of conscience, and the precepts of religion, belongs only to the votaries of the devil.—This is a very momentous concern, in which we are all deeply interested: I beseech you, therefore, ye gallant, gay Lotharios of the age, to look to it.

Before I shall propose any method by which *lovely woman* may be more protected than she is at present, I shall state the justice of the law of the land, by which every *man* may ob-



tain not only redress, but heavy damages, from the person who does him an injury, traduces his character, or vilifies him so as to affect his worldly interest. If a nobleman or private gentleman is vilified or libelled, the law gives him ample redress by heavy damages. If a tradesman is vilified or libelled, he prosecutes, and the law gives him damages according to the injury he is supposed to have received, or may receive, relative to his trade. Unmarried women of fashion have received heavy damages\* for scandalous paragraphs against them even in the newspapers: men and women of all descriptions have redress open to them from the law of the land, except the much to be

\* Mr. Tattersall paid 4000*l.* damages for a paragraph in the newspaper of which he was proprietor, though he never knew it was inserted until he arrived from his country-house.

pitied seduced and abandoned fair one, whose injury is by far the greatest that man or woman can sustain. As for the nobleman or gentleman, when the aspersions on his character are cleared up in public court, it is sufficient to his honour; the fining or imprisonment of the libeller is but of little consequence to him; the verdict of a jury sets all right between him and the world.

Before I mention the actual and only redress that a woman who has been seduced and abandoned can obtain from a court of justice, I will ask a few questions of those barristers who are in the most constant habits of pleading at the bar, from the celebrity of their talents and oratory. Do they often receive a brief to plead the cause of a woman who prosecutes for the non-compliance in a promise of matri-

mony, and at the same time acknowledges, that, in consequence of that promise, she has given up her person to the defendant ? I believe they will not answer me in the affirmative. Let us therefore examine what redress a woman, in such a situation, can obtain in a court of justice. I never yet heard of a woman appearing to prosecute for a non-compliance of marriage, who instructed her counsel, in his pleadings, to state, that on the defendant's promising her marriage, she yielded to his wishes. I am of opinion that her counsel would advise her to keep that part of the history to herself. But might not the opposite counsel, on cross-examination, inquire whether she had ever submitted her person to the defendant ? And might it not be observed, with some degree of effect, to the jury, that it would have been more prudent to have gone to

church first, and then have consummated the nuptials? What charge would a judge give to the jury on such an occasion? and what damages would they give to such a woman? The action, I fear, would be soon got rid of, and I have my doubts whether or not she might not be told that she was an impudent hussey for demanding damages for a breach of promise of marriage, when she had wantonly put herself in a situation in which it would have been disgraceful in any man to have fulfilled it.

But a greater misfortune attends the incautious, credulous, unsuspicious fair one, who, from real affection, and knowing the sincerity of her own heart, suspects neither deceit or perjury from her seducer. She has no witnesses to bring forward to attest his perjured promises: before Hea-

ven, and in secret, those vows were made : she therefore has not, nor can she have redress. But I must, at the same time, beg leave to ask, if a woman is seduced and abandoned, is not the injury done to her greater than the libelling or vilifying the character of a gentleman or a tradesman ? Yet they have ample redress : the gentleman, when his character is cleared up, suffers not in the least, and has the pleasing gratification, in all companies where he goes, of being complimented and congratulated on the honesty of his conduct, every one deprecating the villany of the assassin of his character. The tradesman even benefits from the false aspersion ; for, such is the natural compassion of mankind, that many are induced to deal with an injured, honest man, who otherwise would not have thought about him, or, perhaps, have ever heard of him.



But where does the kind, incautious, and affectionate woman find redress? Nowhere. If, indeed, in addition to the heart-breaking misery of being thus abandoned, she should have the additional misery of being with child, she may certainly swear the child to the seducer, and compel him to pay forty pounds to the parish, who will take care of the infant, if she chooses to part with it; but it must be an unnatural mother who does not wish to have the care of her own offspring. In this place, I believe I am correct, the parish will only allow her at most three shillings per week. Thus the infernal perjured miscreant gets rid of the woman and the child; for she cannot compel him to give her any maintenance. Thus, deserted by her friends, and forsaken by him, she is left to make her way in the world as well as she can. Many, it can-



not be denied, are compelled, from impending starvation, to seek the means of satisfying hunger by prostitution ; but they are very few indeed, when compared with the great family of women who are supported by it.

In former days, every unmarried woman who had a child was compelled to stand publicly in the church, in a white sheet ; but the shame and exposure of this punishment frequently produced the most unnatural of crimes, as the terror of such a public exposition was the cause of many women murdering their children, for which reason that fatal ceremony is now altogether omitted : nevertheless, the unfeeling and censorious part of the world deride and censure a woman who has had this misfortune. They, alas ! never look into their own conduct,

but are ever greedy to slander others; and yet people with such a disposition go to church constantly, and dare call themselves Christians; but little do they imitate or think of the all-forgiving love and kindness of the Author of their religion, who even pardoned the woman taken in adultery.

Before I give any opinion how these unfortunate and injured women might be redressed and protected, I will relate three instances of villany perpetrated by unfeeling monsters, which, within a few years, have come to my knowledge, and I pledge my honour to the truth of them.

A young woman, the daughter of a reputable tradesman, happened to gain the friendship of the daughter of a gentleman of wealth and consequence, and

such were her amiable manners, that the parents of the young lady were induced to take her into their house and complete her education. There an officer persuaded her by the usual arts, and a most solemn promise of marriage, to elope with him to the Isle of Wight. But he remained only one night with her ; and, without giving her the least suspicion of his intentions, went on board the fleet then lying at Spithead under sailing orders for the West Indies. When she arose in the morning, and inquired after her lover, the waiter of the inn informed her that the gentleman had taken his trunk away with him, and was gone in a boat on board the fleet at Spithead. At the same time he informed her that every thing was paid in the house, supposing her, from the conduct of this ruffian, to be a woman of pleasure.

I need not tell the reader the distraction and misery of mind she must have suffered. Having quitted her parents and her protectors, where she was educated, to them she could not return; and, in this wretched situation, she knew not what step to take, or what measure to pursue. At length she recollected that two young ladies, with whom she had been in the strictest habits of friendship, lived not far from the place of her misery. She wrote to them, requesting they would be so kind as to call on her; at the same time informing them in general terms, that, from some unforeseen and extraordinary events, she was in the greatest distress. They immediately came to her, when she related to them the whole of her misfortune. These excellent girls went home to their father, and told him the whole history. That worthy man

instantly took her to his own house, treated her with the utmost affection and tenderness, soothed her sorrows, and after a certain time, the affair being known only to his family, he reconciled her parents to her, and restored her to them.—The villainous miscreant of a seducer died of the yellow fever shortly after his arrival in the West Indies.

My next history is of a girl, the daughter of a reputable tradesman in a country town, who had for two or three years lived as lady's maid in a genteel family in the neighbourhood. An officer in one of his Majesty's regiments prevailed on this girl to quit her place, with every promise of protection, and to live with him. When she had been with him only twenty-four hours, the father, being informed of her elopement, made a diligent search after



her throughout the quarters of the regiment; but her seducer concealed her so as to elude the vigilance of her father, and sent her with a soldier's wife to an inn in London, assuring her that, as soon as his duty would permit him, he would follow her. Four days after, he sent her four guineas, and told her by letter that it was impossible for him to live with her; for, if his parents should discover the connection, it would prove his ruin. I am of opinion, that, in justice, they should have discarded him for ever for so base a conduct towards the woman he had thus seduced and deserted. I most solemnly declare, that I would make a son of mine, if I had one, allow a woman in this predicament an ample maintenance, according to his power; or I would disinherit him for ever. By the greatest chance in the world, the wife of an officer



in the navy came up from Chatham to the same inn, when, observing this girl extremely miserable, she prevailed on her to disclose her distress, and this amiable and generous woman took her into her own family. She has since, as I have been informed, married an officer in the navy.

It is but an act of justice to mention, in this place, how kind, affectionate, and generous the gallant tar is to woman. There is scarcely an instance of a sailor deserting a woman, or using her ill. Rough at sea as the boisterous billows, unconquerable they ride over the foaming surge, and, masters of the waves, to woman, and to woman only, do they own subjection. They know the value of the loveliest part of human nature, and treat them as they deserve, with honour, sincerity, and protection. Would

I could say the same in general of their brethren in war ! But with sorrow do I relate, that many seek as much to ruin a woman, as others seek a civic crown ; and regard every virgin sacrificed to their infernal lust, as a fresh laurel on their brow. Nor are there a few who feel as little remorse in turning a woman on the town, as in turning a horse for the winter, to save expence, on a common. I am no friend to an increase of penal statutes ; we have enough of them. Yet I should wish to see another, with heavy punishments for female seduction, added to the number.

The third and last instance of the baseness and villany of man towards woman, with which I shall trouble the reader, although I could give fifty more, is of a servant girl who lived with a woman that

was kept by an opulent citizen. He visited this woman for some months, allowed her an income, which was paid her punctually every week ; but he never let her know his name, and desired she never would ask who he was. This is a constant practice amongst citizens who are not known at the west end of the town : nay more, they often pass by fictitious names ; it is their constant practice ; and there are many women at this moment who are sumptuously maintained by merchants, whose *real* name they never know, and whose interest it is not to know it ; for, if these delicate factors should suspect that they were discovered, it is an hundred to one if they ever entered the house again.

This *honest* citizen at last took a fancy to the servant, prevailed on her to quit

her mistress and take an apartment, promising to maintain her in comfort and independence: the girl yielded to his wishes; and the following morning he quitted her altogether, and left her to pay the lodging.

Let me soberly and seriously ask my readers what they think of these three miscreants? My opinion is, that they merit the gallows; but so, alas! it is, that, in a country renowned for the wisdom of its legislature, there is no law that can reach *them*.

I shall now propose the outlines of a remedy, to prevent such inhuman monsters from perpetrating their acts of infamy, at the expence and ruin of too credulous, confiding woman. It certainly is in the power of the legislature to afford

the sex more protection; and it is my prayer to Heaven, that some true lover of them, now in Parliament, may undertake their cause. I pledge myself, if ever I should have the honour of a seat in the House of Commons, to consult some of the most able men in this country, in order to bring forward a bill for the better protection of woman, and to afford relief and maintenance to a female, seduced and abandoned by any faithless and unfeeling man: and I trust, that, in such a just, humane, and laudable design, I should find a warm and animated support, both in the hearts and voices of a great and commanding majority of the British senate.

I am conscious of my own inability to frame a law for the prevention of such abuses; therefore I shall only give the outlines, trusting that some generous and

able senator will undertake the framing and completion of this grateful task. I propose, therefore, that every man who seduces a woman, if he does not marry her, shall be compelled to give her a maintenance, such as the legislature may judge that she has a claim to receive, and the man, according to his circumstances and situation in life, is able to bestow. Not that I would, by any means, wish that a woman's oath should alone convict a man, and make him father a child, when she has been connected with others, which she may now do, and lay her infant to any man whom she chooses to pitch upon, although he never has been within twenty miles of her ; a circumstance that has happened to many men, and particularly to an acquaintance of my own, who was thus compelled to father his brother's misdeeds. I am sanctioned for wishing to



exclude a woman's oath without some corroborating testimony, when I inform the reader, that Madame La Chevaliere d'Eon, when she personated, for some years, Le Chevalier d'Eon, had a child sworn to her.—Substantial proof should be produced, the same as in cases of *crim. con.*; and, I think, were the court to compel the seducer to maintain the woman, it would be full as laudable an act as the endeavour to make a man pay 13,000*l.* for defiling the chaste bed of a taylor\*. It may be truly said, that many men could not pay such damages, and must be confined to a prison; but are not all those who are found guilty of *crim. con.* compelled to pay the verdict, lie in prison, or

\* Damages were laid at 13,000*l.* and the verdict was very heavy, amounting to several thousands. With the specific sum I cannot charge my memory.

fly the country ? Is not the one crime, morally speaking, as great as the other ?

To consider this matter further, I am certain it would considerably lessen the number of those wretched women whom we every night see roving the streets to supply the necessaries of life, if man in certain cases, and in certain cases ONLY, (which I have minutely spoken of in my chapter on Matrimony and Polygamy,) were permitted to marry a second wife during the life of the former. To the above-mentioned chapter I refer the reader for my reasons, which are stated at a considerable length. I am confident, if these two regulations were enforced, and permitted by the legislature, that in a very few years prostitution would lose one half of its wretched victims. The Magdalen,

Foundling Hospital, and other charities, are laudable institutions: but, in effect, they are no more than attempting to lave the River Thames with hand-buckets; you must strike at the fountain-head, to dry up the stream.

Having spoken so fully of the detestation and abhorrence in which I hold the crime of seducing and abandoning women; in justice to myself, and for my own satisfaction, and particularly on account of that respect I so truly profess for all censorious old maids, church-going nypocrites, and pious, regenerated, methodistical sinners; as well as to save them the trouble of making any pleasant remarks relative to my conduct in this instance, I here most solemnly, and in the face of Heaven, declare, that I never seduced a virgin in my life. I confess that my poverty has

sometimes been the cause of my never having committed such an act, because I have ever conscientiously held it the greatest of crimes to seduce a woman, without making a suitable provision for her.

Reader, thou mayest say that I have no great virtue to boast of, and that my character is not distinguished by any pre-eminent morality. I do not claim the distinction: but truth I claim; and God, who reads my heart, knows the truth of the assertion I have just made; the fact is so. —And here let the chapter close.

## CHAPTER IV.

*History of the King's Bench.*

THE real and true state of this prison, and the misery and distress that prisoners suffer in it, are very little known to the world in general. It is the public opinion, that no persons surrender to the King's Bench but such who have money in their possession which their creditors cannot lay hold of, so that they are enabled to live there in some degree of comfort : that it is a place of mirth, festivity, and joy : that no prisoner is in want ; and that, in general, those who surrender themselves only go there till a proper arrangement of their affairs can be accomplished. I have proof positive to the contrary. It is high-

ly worthy the attention of our legislature to see that the subject, restrained in the greatest blessing of life, *his liberty*, should not be in want of what is absolutely necessary to prevent the corruption and consequent destruction of the soul. The legislators possess a protection of their persons; and it becomes a duty in them to preserve their constituents from an oppressive deprivation of their personal liberty.

This prison rivals the purlieus of Wapping, St. Giles's, and St. James's, in vice, drunkenness, and debauchery; and, setting aside the indulgence of unnatural propensities, may be said to out-Herod Sodom and Gomorrah. Unless a man be of a certain age, of a bold and firm mind, and of undaunted resolution to bear with fortitude and manly dignity the oppres-



sion and heart-breaking agonies he suffers from his persecutors, he soon sinks into drunkenness and dissipation ; and, what is worse, loses every sense of honour and dignity of sentiment—every moral principle and virtuous disposition, with which he may enter these walls—from the immoral contagion that is to be found in them. This contagion is so great, that, like the plague or the yellow fever, if he does not separate himself from the multitude, and live alone, which, under his circumstances, he must be more than man to do, or contrive to associate with those alone, for such there are, who bring honour and gentlemanly manners with them into their confinement, which is no very easy matter, he soon will be contaminated, and be lost to himself, to his friends, and to the world for ever.

The very air of the place is enough to infect a weak and afflicted mind ; if its virtue should be able to preserve it from the despair which presents itself to many, on their passing the gates, which are barred by an unfeeling creditor ; or to support the severity of the laws, and the unfeeling conduct of the fattening ministers of them.

With respect to the women to whose lot it has fallen to be doomed to this miserable and corrupting abode, those who are good become bad, and those who are bad become worse. No unhappy and unfortunate female ever did, nor do I believe ever will, quit this seat of contamination without the most degrading, if not fatal, effects of such a situation. Nay, if Diana and her nymphs, from not being able to pay the penalties for an accidental

breach of the game-laws, were to be confined one twelvemonth in the Bench, unless they were locked up in the strong stone-room, they would be completely fitted for the associates or attendants on the Paphos Queen, and perhaps in a state to furnish a set of game-keepers for the ladies of manors in that delightful island : for Messalina never stole from Claudius Cæsar's bed to greater scenes of revelling than is practised and enjoyed within these wanton walls.

There are within them from three hundred and fifty to five hundred prisoners, out of which number, I can with truth assert, there are very seldom fifty of this melancholy number who have any regular means of sustenance. I do not mean to say that prisoners have ever been absolutely starved to death ; but this

I positively assert, that numbers of the lower order, and many officers confined some even for small debts under fifty pounds \*, who have served their country with gallantry and fidelity, and have bled in her defence, have often gone a whole week with not above three or four meals of victuals ; nay more, have frequently been destitute of a penny to buy them a roll of bread for breakfast. The comfort of appeasing hunger is too great a luxury for a confined debtor to be sure of enjoying. And if a creditor, in this boasted land of liberty, were compelled to allow his debtor in prison one good meal of victuals a-day, it would, I doubt not, be exclaimed against as an horrid act of compulsory injustice. “ No ; he owes me money ;

\* I shall speak hereafter of officers confined for small debts.

to prison he shall go ; and, when he is there, whether he starves or not is no concern of mine." I call on the supreme justice of Heaven to determine, whether, in a land which boasts so loudly of its liberty, of the justice of its laws, and the lenity of its government, or in any other land—whether, I say, it is just, that, because I have been extravagant and imprudent, or even if I have done worse, that because I am a debtor, I should suffer the most searching of all penalties, that of hunger ? Is it not sufficient atonement to the injured creditor to deprive me of my liberty ? but must he starve me also ? Am I also to be deprived of the sixpence a-day, at best a miserable pittance, which the law of my country gives me, by the petty-fogging reptile, ycleped an attorney, who, by some quirk or quibble, or litigious oath or process, can, for near

twelve months, prevent the prisoner from receiving the allowance which the law of the land intended should be paid him instantly on his committal, to keep him from starving? Just Heaven! shower down thy vengeance, I beseech thee, on all such infamous and inhuman oppressors of their fellow-creatures! or soften their hearts, and turn them from deeds of cruelty and oppression!

If a prisoner be arrested, and surrenders to the King's Bench in the month of June, after the term is over, there being no term till the next November, during a period of near five months, he may starve; for, until the Court is sitting, he cannot apply for his groats; but when November arrives, and he applies for them, then the attorney may, by a litigious process, prevent him from recovering the miserable



boon until the following May. Many prisoners, during the five months of this long vacation, have suffered cruelly, and some would have absolutely starved, if it had not been for the generosity of some gentlemen, who themselves are prisoners, and have it in their power to contribute to the wants of the wretched sufferer. Many gentlemen, as well as others of superior stations in life, for several weeks, have, to my knowledge, for successive days, never known what it was to enjoy one good meal.

Nor is this all: from the scanty fare, and irregularity of their diet, they frequently contract diseases, which they have carried with them to their graves, and made them miserable objects during their lives. One gentleman, who, if he had justice done him, would be worth from

thirty-five to fifty thousand pounds, during four months was not able to purchase any other aliment than a cask of sea biscuit, with some brown tea and treacle. From the bad quality of the biscuit, he was seized with a violent bowel complaint, from which he with difficulty recovered. During his illness, his humane relations, who, by a suit in Chancery, had thrown him into prison, sent to the prison door, every other day, to know if he was dead; but never came near him, or sent him any relief. Providence has spared his life, I trust, to enable him to punish such inhuman monsters.

But, supposing every prisoner to receive sixpence per day from his creditor, I will ask one simple question; will any man venture to assert that a man can live on such a stipend? What can he purchase for

it? Let those who make this law try, only for one day, what they can purchase for such a sum, and they will find that they will go to bed both hungry and thirsty, unless they drink water; for a sufficient quantity of bread and small beer cannot be purchased for that money to satisfy their appetite and their thirst.

The author was confined in the year 1798, and speaks of the price of provisions at that period, when they were above a third cheaper than at present. What can a prisoner buy now, in 1801, for sixpence, when even bread is at twenty-pence the quartern loaf, and all provisions bear a proportionate exorbitance? I shall endeavour to make a calculation of what a prisoner may purchase for sixpence. The quartern loaf weighs four pounds five ounces, and is at twenty-pence; beer at

four-pence the quart: one pint of porter at two-pence, and one pound of bread at four-pence farthing the pound, costs six-pence farthing. By this calculation, a prisoner cannot purchase one pound of bread and one pint of porter per day. Meat is totally out of the question: one meal per day of bread and meat is too great a luxury for a debtor to enjoy. I will ask any unfeeling church-going hypocrite, when he lifts his sanctified eyes to heaven, and repeats that petition, in the most beautiful of all prayers, "Give us this day our daily bread," when, at that very time, he is starving his debtor; I will ask him how he dare supplicate that just Being, who declared that he will shut the gates of heaven against such as refuse to visit those who are sick and in prison?

I know it is said, with justice, that a

prisoner for debt is not to live in prison at the expence of his creditor. Certainly not. For some idle vagabonds would run in debt on purpose to be supported without labouring for their maintenance. But, in return, I will ask, whether it is just he should be starved? But poverty is the greatest of all crimes; therefore, in the first instance, the law is more severe against a debtor than a robber, a murderer, or a catamite; for they are taken before a justice of the peace, and sufficient cause must be shewn, before they can be committed: but a man may often be taken by a bailiff, and dragged to prison, on the false oath of a villain, and deprived of the dearest blessing in life, his liberty. It is said, that if a man be imprisoned falsely, he has sufficient redress from the laws of the land. I deny it; he has not: and, to validate my assertion, I will state the extent of the



redress he can obtain. I could give more than one hundred cases, full as grievous and oppressive ; but, that I may not bear too hard on the sensibility of my humane readers, and, I hope, I shall have many of them, I will content myself with the following relation :—

A particular friend of mine, a gentleman of distinguished knowledge, science, and philanthropy, and, but a few years past, member of parliament for one of the most opulent counties in Ireland, was arrested for another person in the month of July, just as the long vacation commenced, and carried to the Bench. No term commencing till November, he remained in prison near five months. The moment the Court sat he was discharged, when he commenced a prosecution against the person who had so long deprived him of



his liberty : but the prosecution was scarcely begun when the defendant became a pennyless bankrupt, and was himself carried to the Fleet prison. What redress can this gentleman have for the loss of his liberty for five months? He cannot put this man in the pillory for perjury, as the law does not allow it, because it was not wilful : but if he could be pilloried, is it any atonement to him for his sufferings to see this fellow stand for one hour with his head through a hole in a board at Charing-cross? Would it not be more consistent with justice to prevent such cruel proceedings in the first instance? The felon in Newgate, and the prisoner in the Penitentiary-house, Cold-bath-fields, for high crimes and misdemeanors against the State, whatever his sufferings may be in a solitary cell, has one comfort—he knows not the pangs of

hunger : but the gentleman, the citizen, the sailor, and the soldier, who may have bled in their country's defence, oppressed by sinful poverty, the worst of crimes, is allowed only sixpence per day for all his wants, and has not even a bed or fire found him to rest his wearied limbs or warm his half-starved frame.

When any one surrenders to the King's Bench, and has a command of money, he can procure a room by paying his chum, or chamber companion, out, as it is called ; that is, by giving some poor man a weekly sum to let him have the room to himself, to the mutual convenience of both : as the latter, for the sake of getting a stipend to purchase food, will be content to get a lodging where he can find it at a cheap rate, by sleeping ten or twelve in a small room ; or without any

expenditure at all, by preferring a soft plank in the tap-room, or a smooth stone on a stair-case.

We who live in a land of liberty, who boast of the justice and lenity of our laws, who profess Christianity, can we, without remorse of conscience, reflect on the miseries the oppressed debtor suffers? Can we pretend to possess any feeling and any religion or humanity, and with indifference view one part of our fellow-creatures persecuted and half-starved by unfeeling, remorseless creditors? I positively assert, fearless of contradiction, that many prisoners in the King's Bench have been half-starved, and have contracted disorders, from lack of sustenance, of which they have died.

The law against debtors, and their suf-

ferings in prison, cry aloud to Heaven and the Legislature for redress. I will frankly acknowledge it to be my individual opinion, that no person, in a country of liberty, should be confined for debt, who gives up his whole property to his creditors. But the law having decreed it otherwise, and lawyers fattening, as they do, on the fruits of it, I must leave it to the future operations of justice and of mercy. But why am I, because I am unfortunately born a gentleman, liable to be deprived of my liberty throughout my life, for the small sum of ten pounds; which is a possible case, when, from the rich merchant to the inferior trader who keeps a green-stall, provided four-fifths of his creditors consent, can procure his certificate of bankruptcy, without the risk of imprisonment: while a gentleman, if he owes ten thousand pounds, and can

pay only nine thousand nine hundred and ninety pounds, may, by one obdurate creditor, be confined all his life, as an act of grace has not for many years involved so large a sum. Would it not be just, at least, to put the gentleman and the soldier on the same footing with a vender of cabbages, or a cabbaging tailor?

Many officers have been, and some now are, confined in prison, who have offered their creditors a part in money, and good security for the remainder at a distant period: but they have been deaf to all terms, imagining that they have rich relations or friends, who will come forward and satisfy the whole at once. They know little of human nature: nor does any man thoroughly know either his relations or his friends until he has once been in prison. But I repeat my opi-

nion, that, in a free country, there should be no confinement of the person for debt ; yet I would have it made felony for any person to secrete one shilling of his property. It is said, that, were there no law to confine a debtor's person, our trade and commerce would suffer. It is no such thing. There is no law in Scotland to confine a debtor who gives up his property ; and has the trade of Edinburgh and of Glasgow decreased ? I will not confine my argument to this country. Look to Holland, a country where the true interests of trade and commerce are as well understood as in England. There is no law there to imprison a debtor ; yet Holland had arrived at its wealth and grandeur by trade alone.

It must be allowed by every candid person, that these arguments, in favour of



the personal liberty of the subject of this country, are very forcible ; but yet I fear there is a stronger reason against it, as a considerable part of the expence incurred to the debtor before he is imprisoned, and the processes carried on to bring the actions against him to a judgment, from the stamps and fees, &c. &c. form a considerable part of the revenue to Government, which, until a substitute is found, it may not be judged prudent to annihilate ; but, with my lack of brains, I would undertake to find one before to-morrow morning, that would answer every purpose of finance. Such a measure would also deprive one half of the attornies of their iniquitous bread, moistened with the tears of their miserable victims, which might be considered by some Machiavelian moralists as a crying act of injustice.

Every term prisoners come from the remotest parts of England to surrender to the King's Bench, not from choice, but from compulsion. The process of the law in this respect is unknown to the public. I will state it. If a man is arrested three hundred miles from London, on a judgment, or taken in execution, he is carried to the county jail ; but if he is arrested for a simple debt, and some friend bails him, when the time arrives that he must either pay the money or surrender his person to prison, or fix his friend with the debt who bailed him, he cannot surrender to the county jail. Let him be in the most distant part of England, he must travel to London and surrender there, and on foot, if he cannot afford to pay for the conveyance of a coach or a waggon.

One very singular instance I will relate, of a poor old man, between seventy and eighty years of age, who came all the way from Cumberland on foot to surrender, sooner than be so dishonest as to fix his bail. When he came to the door of the King's Bench, he was bare-footed, and holding his shoes and a small bundle of clothes hung across a stick over his shoulder. He shewed the door-keeper a letter from an attorney, stating his case, and at whose suit he came to surrender. The door-keeper told him, according to his duty so to do, that he could not permit him to surrender; for, if he did, without undergoing the proper forms, that though he was locked up there, if the process was not regularly performed, his friend, who had bailed him, would be fixed with the debt. The door-keeper very kindly ordered one of the tipstaves to go over with

him to Chancery-lane, where having paid the customary fees, and walked some hundreds of miles, he then marched over to the King's Bench prison, and was received in proper form within its walls.

Having stated this curious, though a very common process, relative to a debtor surrendering to the King's Bench, I will state a process of the law which takes place after the prisoner has surrendered, of which I had an example in my own affairs, when a prisoner in this place. Amongst the writs to which I surrendered myself there, one of them was in the Court of Common Pleas: the rest were in the Court of King's Bench. Accordingly, on a subsequent day, that honest officer, Mr. Neave, the door-keeper, came into my room, to inform me that a Habeas Corpus was served on me, to remove me to the Fleet

Prison. Although I knew a good deal of the process and expences of the law for debt, having paid some thousands for my knowledge, I was ignorant of this ceremony. I must confess I could not view this process either as humane or just; that being a prisoner, and after having, by the assistance of my friends, made myself a little comfortable in one prison, I should be dragged to another. However, being of Dr. Pangloss's opinion, *que tout est pour le mieux*, though the circumstance was sufficient to make another man doubt of the fitness of things, and that it would be of no benefit to fret and vex myself about it, I asked Mr. Neave how I should act in this case, as, from his situation, he must be well informed of all such processes. He advised me, as the debt was but a small one, to desire my lawyers to settle it; which was done, and I re-



mained where I was. If I had not been able to pay, I should have been taken to the Fleet Prison, there surrendered, and, after paying the fees of that prison, must have taken an Habeas Corpus, to remove myself back to the King's Bench. The whole expence would have been about seven pounds; and if I could not have procured the money, I must have remained in the Fleet. To this case there is something more attached than the expence of bringing myself back by a Habeas Corpus to the Bench. By the kind assistance of my worthy and best friend, Jacob Wilkinson, who was my bondsman to the marshal, I had procured the blessing of a liberty to walk and enjoy the open air within the boundaries of the King's Bench, called the Rules. The expence incurred on the bond to obtain the benefit of the Rules, is ten pounds for the first hundred,



and four pounds for every other hundred of the debt or debts for which you are imprisoned. For instance, if a man is a prisoner for four hundred, he must find good security, and pay twenty-two pounds, and so on in proportion for a larger debt. Had I been carried over to the Fleet, and there remained, I must have forfeited the money I had paid to obtain the liberty of the Rules of the Bench, and been closely confined, if not able to procure money to pay the expences necessary to procure the Rules of the Fleet : and, what is more singular, if there had been seven or eight writs, say any number, (for it makes no difference, in common, whether it be one or one hundred pleas against me,) I should have been dragged there for every one of them, and paid the same expences on each and every writ as on one, if I could ; and if I could not, the expences would have

lain against me in the Fleet, and I must have discharged them before I could be liberated from prison, after settling with my creditors.

I shall beg leave to mention another singular fact. If a man surrenders to the Fleet Prison instead of the King's Bench, which is at his option, if he has but one writ against him in the Court of Common Pleas, and one, eight, or eight hundred writs, (it is all the same, though not the same expence,) in the Court of King's Bench, against him, on every writ in the Court of King's Bench he can be removed to the King's Bench Prison from the Fleet. This is *ringing the changes* with a vengeance. It is not sufficient that a prisoner be confined in one prison, but he must like a shuttlecock, be thrown backwards and forwards from one prison to the other,

with the distress of being put to considerable expence, in addition to all that he has already sustained,

A short time before I was discharged from this place, two brothers were brought up from some distant part of the island, and surrendered there. They had been engaged in a law suit, in which they were cast. The person with whom they had been at law was so humane as not to continue the process; but the attorney sent them both to the King's Bench for the costs of the suit, amounting to something above twenty pounds. This case may appear singular to the reader, who fortunately is not informed of the persecution practised on prisoners by attornies: but I will inform them, and if they doubt my assertions, they may apply to the records of the King's Bench

and Fleet Prisons, and they will find there are many hundreds who are confined for the costs of suit to the lawyer, whose original debt did not amount to ten pounds; nay further, there are numbers now in prison for debts originally amounting only to the small sums of four, five, six, or seven pounds. These small debts have been brought to a judgment by the attorney, which attaches the person, the moment the costs, jointly with the debt, amount to above ten pounds, though the debtor is able and willing to pay the original debt. Many have offered to pay even a part of the costs: but, although the original debt did not exceed five or six pounds, they now are fixed in prison for above twenty pounds, owing to the attorney not being willing to relax one shilling of his demand for costs of suit in bringing the debt to an execution.

I will give you an instance, relative to myself, not only of the extravagant expence attending small debts under ten pounds, but of the generosity and integrity of the *honest* tradesman. I built a one-horse chair some years past ; the price was, to the best of my recollection, between fifty and sixty pounds. The first day I drove it for two hours, merely to try it, and to have it properly hung : I then left it a few days with the maker, to regulate it ; and, before I took it away, I paid one half of the price in money, and gave a bill for the other half at a short date, which was paid. However, I happened to send the chaise back to be screwed up, and to have some trifling alteration made, &c. the expence of which amounted to five pounds six shillings, or six pounds five, I forget which. After owning this trifle for a considerable space



of time, I was served with a copy of a writ : this was but a very few months before I surrendered to the King's Bench prison, amongst a variety of other demands of much greater amount, all of which I paid before that horrid day, the Morrow of All Souls, which is so fatal to many bodies in the first week in November. I had been out of town for above two months, and totally forgot that I had been served with a copy of a writ for so small a sum. In December following, a sheriff's officer met me, who had oftentimes arrested me, and told me he had a warrant against me. I asked him why he did not call at my house in the morning early, that I might have gone out with him and settled it, as it was then near my time of dinner. He gave me a very satisfactory reason why he did not. I asked him the sum it amounted to. " A



small sum, somewhat above twenty," he replied. As it was rather late in the day, and near dinner-time, I desired him to call on me the next morning, and I would settle it. "I would with pleasure, Colonel," said he; "but it is an execution." "That is impossible!" I replied, "for I have not signed any bond or warrant of attorney to any person existing."—"I assure you, Colonel," continued he, "it is an execution. You ought to know the law, and what lawyers can do, for you have paid enough to know it in your lifetime."—"I now understand you," I replied; "I suppose it is some small debt under ten pounds, brought to a judgment by the attorney."—"Exactly so." To cut this matter very short, I went to my friend Mr. Wright in Carey-street, and surrendered to him. My agent very kindly brought me the money to dis-

charge the debt and *costs*, which amounted to above twenty-four pounds. Now, if I had not been able to pay it, I must have surrendered to the King's Bench or Fleet, and there I might have lain until I had rotted, unless I had paid the twenty-four pounds; for I have no reason to believe that the attorney employed against me would have deviated from the line adopted by his brethren, and have shewn me any very distinguished favour.

I may here, I think, as well as in any other page of this volume, inform the world, that when I was making an arrangement with my creditors, and they had agreed to take a part in money, and a security in future for the remainder, the particulars of which I have stated in another part of this Work, there was but *one* attorney, out of the many employed

against me, that would relax one shilling of their costs. Although their clients were satisfied with a part, they would be paid their whole demand; and some of the costs to the attornies amounted to very near as much as the original debt owing to their clients. But this is in the ordinary way of the detestable profession which they follow. But, notwithstanding all the injuries they have done me, and are continually doing mankind, I will prove my Christian charity by presenting them with their portrait from the sacred writings—"Ye are of your father the devil; and the works of your father ye will do." Filial piety, perhaps, may be their only virtue.

I desire it may be well understood, that I do not mean, in any sense whatever, to apply this conduct to the higher orders of

attornies and solicitors, who would disdain to engage in low and base traffic; though not one of them is without one of these low fellows in his service to do the dirty work which they must not appear to do for themselves. Whatever they may do in the higher course of business, they disdain the common jog-trot of writ, declaration and judgment; nor are they linked with the pawn-broker, silver-smith, ironmonger, &c. &c. who discount gentlemen's bills, giving a part in money and the rest in goods, with four, five, or six names indorsed on the back of the bill, and who purchase such bills from these extortioners, in the hope that the person who drew them will not be punctual at the day the bill is due, so that he may bring his action against the drawer of the bill, and make him pay costs for every separate name indorsed on the back of it.

I shall now proceed to relate an example of extortion which I know to be correctly true. A lady in the habit of doing bills in the manner I have related, issued a bill for eighty, ninety, or an hundred pounds, I forget which sum : this bill, after passing through eight persons' hands, of course had as many indorsements, and was purchased by one of these miscreants. When the bill became due she could not immediately pay it, and he of course issued a writ against her : her lawyer undertook, put in bail for her, and defended the action. When she came forward to pay the money, this honest man charged her *eight costs*.

This worthy member of society, who lived in the Temple, is now dead, and gone to the devil. There being a special cause to be tried in the infernal regions,

his infernal majesty could spare him no longer; but, in return for services performed, he has made him his attorney-general \*. On her paying the wretch his demand, she then informed him that she would prosecute him for an usurious transaction, and make him pay about fifteen hundred pounds, which would be the penalty of it, in return for his generous and liberal conduct to her. But the Devil, who has so greatly promoted him in the other world, used to stand his friend while he was in this; and he helped him out of the scrape in the following manner:—

This lady had a whimsical propensity now and then, when in want of cash, to

\* The attorney-general, in former times, was called *Diabolus Regis*, or the King's Bull Dog. Vide a book intitled "The Mirror of Magistrates."



borrow some creditable person's name, in a way which is commonly called forging ; and a bill of hers was at this time in circulation, which this attorney had got into his possession, with a distinguished nobleman's name to it, which she, in her free way, had written with her own fair hand. He accordingly took an early opportunity to inform her, that a bill had been offered to him for negociation, drawn by her, and accepted by a nobleman, for which, before he gave cash, as persons of high rank were not, like their inferiors, always punctual at the day of payment, he requested to know if she had any objection to his calling on him to ascertain that circumstance. The lady replied, that the bill would certainly be paid on the day it was due ; and that it would be very intruding in him to trouble the nobleman with a visit on any such

subject. At length, however, our hero in infamy began to speak a little plainer than he had hitherto done, and frankly told her that the bill was in his possession, and that he knew she had forged that nobleman's name. She then threw herself on his mercy, and he generously spared her life on her engaging not to commence a prosecution against him for his former infamous conduct. I am not certain whether I am right or not as to the law in such a case ; but I am inclined to believe that this honourable and humane attorney was guilty of compounding felony ; but if he was, it is not to be wondered at, as it was in the way of his business.

As to myself, I cannot charge my memory with ever having paid more than four costs on one bill of exchange, which

has fallen into the hands of such honourable practitioners of the law; which, by the by, is tolerably reasonable. These particulars are related in another part of this Work; I shall therefore proceed to the misfortunes, hardships, and prosecutions to which prisoners are subject, from unfeeling creditors, and their harpies ycleped attornies, when doomed to this prison. To proceed—An acquaintance of mine was committed to the King's Bench, in the year 1794, for two debts, amounting to upwards of an hundred pounds, when he gave up all his property, which was then in Chancery, and took the benefit of an Act of Insolvency. In the year following he was imprisoned again, for a debt of no more than twenty-two pounds; when he applied for his sixpences, and was denied them, on account of his having taken the

benefit of a former act for the debt already mentioned, and would have starved, had not a subscription been made for him by his friends, although he had property coming to him which waited the decision of Chancery.

Since that period I have had nothing further to observe: it may, however, be remarked; that when a prisoner sues for his sixpences, he must swear that he is not worth five pounds, (I believe the oath is now extended to ten;) I will not positively assert the actual expence the prisoner must pay to obtain three shillings and sixpence per week, for sometimes their friends do it gratuitously; but where it is paid for, as in many instances, the following charges are near the mark;

|                                                       |   | £.    | s. | d.   |
|-------------------------------------------------------|---|-------|----|------|
| For moving the Court                                  | — | 0     | 10 | 6    |
| To the attorney, for attending at<br>the King's Bench | — | 0     | 6  | 8    |
| For attendance at Westminster<br>Hall                 | — | 0     | 6  | 8    |
|                                                       |   | <hr/> |    |      |
|                                                       |   | £.    | 1  | 3 10 |
|                                                       |   | <hr/> |    |      |

But these are not all the expences of this process. He cannot appear at Westminster Hall unless in the custody of a tipstaff belonging to the King's Bench, who must also be paid for his trouble: then he cannot put his nose out of the prison without paying for a *day rule*, the price of which, I believe, is the same to him, or to any prisoner who has taken the benefit of the Rules, and wishes to go to town to transact business, that is four shillings. I do not pledge myself, in this one instance, to the correctness of the charge, but, I believe, the



fee to the tipstaff is ten shillings; thus thirteen shillings are added to one pound three, already incurred.

If it were not for the sufferings of the prisoner, this process, which a man must undergo to obtain three shillings and sixpence per week to keep him from starving, is so absurd and ridiculous that it would be worthy of laughter; for, that a prisoner should pay one single shilling to obtain the scanty pittance from his creditor of three shillings and sixpence per week, is truly ludicrous. Although it is not in my nature to sport with the feelings and sufferings of the oppressed, yet I am at liberty to laugh heartily at a process of law, I mean, (reader, do not misconstrue my words,) the *law of attornies* relative to the charges they have made to their clients, at whose suit a prisoner is



confined. Every Monday evening, before the clock strikes nine, three shillings and sixpence must be deposited in the hands of the door-keeper for the use of the prisoner; in which payment if the creditor or his attorney is deficient, the action is supersedable, and the prisoner is discharged. Now, I do assert positively, that many attornies have charged their clients three shillings and four-pence, or six shillings and eight-pence, for sending their clerk, or going once to the Bench themselves, to pay the three shillings and sixpence. This, reader, you will readily believe, when you know that these gentlemen will not take a walk over to the King's Bench, or work in any shape, for nothing. So the creditor pays his attorney either three shillings and four-pence, or six shillings and eight-pence, in addi-

tion to the three shillings and sixpence. The whole transaction is scandalous, and requires immediate redress. It may appear singular to the reader, but I assert, that, at this very moment, there are many persons lying in prison, whose original debt to the creditor did not amount to above three, four, five, or six pounds, whose debts now, from costs to the attorneys, do exceed twenty and thirty pounds. I myself have paid for a debt of four pounds thirteen shillings, and for one of six pounds sixteen shillings, and two or three times for a debt under ten pounds—I say, that I have paid ten, twelve, or fourteen pounds costs. Many prisoners are able, and have offered to pay their original debt, but cannot pay costs to the attorney; they therefore remain in confinement, where they might pass their

lives, if an occasional act of insolvency did not relieve them.

I know also, that many creditors have been very willing to take the original debt, and have been desirous of liberating the debtor : but a creditor cannot release the prisoner ; for, if he grants the prisoner a discharge, the attorney fixes him with the costs of the debtor : so the creditor must pay the attorney twenty or thirty pounds costs for doing nothing more than what he ought to do, namely, for discharging his debtor, on his paying the original sum he was indebted to him.

I must now apologize to the reader for breaking off so suddenly, and not describing various other miseries and oppressions to which the unfortunate debtor in this prison is subjected, much to the discredit

of a country which boasts so proudly of its liberty ; but I promise faithfully, in a third volume, which I shortly intend to publish, to give various interesting cases of distress and oppression, not only in the King's Bench and the Fleet, but also in that Court, so well known by the name, style and title of the Marshalsea.

At present I have neither time or place sufficient in these volumes : I shall therefore conclude, for the present, with two or three interesting stories relative to the conduct of attornies, how they obtain bills of exchange, for what reasons they take them, and what cost they charge on them ; together with a few particulars relative to prisoners confined for debts under ten pounds.

Reader, mark well what I am now go-

ing to relate, and seriously reflect, whether, in a Christian country, and in a land of liberty, it is fit that any individual should be subject to such dire persecution. It is not possible for me at present to speak with certainty to the fact, not having as yet obtained an account of the number of prisoners who are confined in the various prisons in London for debts under ten pounds: But I call God to witness, that, from the conversations I have held with various prisoners in the King's Bench, (in the Fleet it is exactly the same,) and the information I have acquired on the subject, I truly believe that I speak much within the compass, when I with horror inform you, that above one half of the prisoners in the King's Bench and the Fleet, (aye, and in most of the other jails in England,) could be liberated, and would be liberated, to-morrow,



were it not for the costs that must be paid to the attorney before they can be discharged.

I shall now relate one instance in which I myself suffered very materially. Many years ago I kept horses at the livery-stables of my old friend Mr. Fozard. I had for some time given over keeping horses, and had settled all accounts with him for many months, when a man called on me, and told me that I owed him four pounds some shillings, for the keeping of a horse at grass some distance from London. I told him that I knew nothing of the matter; that I never had put any horse to grass with him; and that I did not even know the place where he lived, which I literally believed was the fact. In about three days after, I was served with a copy of a writ. I then began to



reflect, and did recollect, that Fozard had put a horse one winter into a straw-yard for me ; but, having settled my account with him, I of course concluded that I had paid that expence with the rest. I accordingly went to his stables and examined the books, when I found that he had not made such a charge, and of course that I owed it. I was served with the copy of a writ on a Friday evening, and on Monday morning quitted town for the neighbourhood of Ascott-heath, preparatory to the races. I was so incautious as not to look at the date of the writ, to see when it was returnable ; nor did I send it to my lawyer, thinking that a week would make but little difference, as I should be in town the following Saturday. The writ, however, was made returnable in three days, and a fresh term commenced in four days. Thus the lawyer had the

start of me by two terms in one week, which enabled him to make such rapid progress in his expences. On the Saturday afternoon, only eight days from the time I was served with the copy of a writ, I went to his house to pay the debt; and judging that I should not have above twenty shillings to pay for the expences at first incurred, was surprised, when his clerk made the account out, to find that the four pounds were, in eight days, accumulated, by the attorney's costs, to eleven or thirteen pounds, I really forget which; but either of them is sufficient for my purpose. On my expostulations relative to the exorbitant charges produced in so short a time, the clerk informed me, that another term had commenced since the issuing of the writ, and consoled me by the assurance, that it was very fortunate I happened to call

that day, as, from my having neglected to plead through my attorney to the writ, judgment would have been entered up against me on the Monday morning following, which would have been three pounds more, and that then I should have been taken in execution. I now began to understand the affair, that it was very regularly carried on, was very legal, very moderate, and very just ; and nought was left for me but to pay the whole sum, acknowledge the equity of the process, and content myself with having had the good fortune to call that day, the moment I came to town, by which I saved the additional charge of three pounds. This all took place in eight days. I had, indeed, seen, during my absence at Ascott-heath, some tolerable good raceing ; but this attorney, it must

be allowed by all sportsmen, beat every thing for speed.

I will trouble the reader with but one case more relative to exorbitant costs on debts for small sums, although I could mention several others which I have paid within the six or seven last years of my life.

Before I surrendered as a prisoner to the King's Bench, I gave a bill to a tradesman, not for any debt contracted by me, but for a lady of my acquaintance. This bill was kept back by a lawyer, into whose hands it fell; and, not being a debt of my own, it escaped my notice. After I was liberated, it was demanded of me; but, as I could not pay it, I was arrested, and compelled, from actual

necessity, to bail it, and defend it for some time, till I was able to pay it, when I gave my attorney a sum of money to discharge that bill, and some other matters I had to settle ; but not having sufficient money given him, he left six pounds unpaid, and informed me of his so doing. The lawyer was perfectly satisfied, and assured him that he would put me to no trouble for the remaining trifle, and that I might pay it when convenient. My lawyer, however, went out of town for two months on business, in which time this gentleman carried on the process against me ; and, having brought it to an execution, fixed me in judgment for sixteen pounds sixteen shillings. It is necessary to remark, that the original bill was only                    pounds, the costs                    pounds, of which he was paid all but six ; and this six pounds he increased,



by additional costs, to sixteen pounds sixteen shillings and sixpence, which, together with what he was paid before, brought the original debt of twenty-six pounds to no less a sum than

In addition to this, the customary expences attending on a judgment, such as sheriffs poundage, caption fee, one guinea, searching the office, and some small perquisite to the house of the officer I went to, amounted to above two pounds more. Thus I paid, for a twenty-six pound debt, no less a sum than

This is law, aye, and very sound, legal, and excellent law too, and what is practised *every day in the year*, to the emolument of the attorney, and ruin of the debtor, who, when it is a distressing



circumstance to him to pay six pounds, is compelled to pay sixteen or be sent to jail, and there to lay until he rots, can pay the costs to the attorney as well as the principal debt.

The reader will please to observe, that I paid sixteen pounds sixteen shillings to the attorney for his costs on the remaining six pounds which were left unpaid on an original debt of twenty-six pounds, on which he had already received

costs.

Before I take my leave of this wretched subject, I cannot refrain from relating a history of an attorney into whose hands a bill fell belonging to a very particular friend of mine; but, first, I shall state the motives which induce attornies to pur-

chase bills of exchange.—When money is scarce, and a gentleman wants a little cash, and cannot get his bill discounted at his banker's, having overdrawn his account considerably; or, as many are situated who have no banker at all; he goes to some advertising money-broker, and gives him a bill, we will say for an hundred pounds, to get discounted: the money-broker goes to some pawn-broker, woollen-draper, ironmonger, or some other tradesman who is in the habit of discounting bills, and giving part in money and part in goods. Of the particular losses that gentlemen suffer by taking half goods and half cash, which is the general custom, I have mentioned in another part of this book; I shall, therefore, only relate how this bill is put into circulation.

The tradesman pays this bill away to some other tradesman who is accustomed to the same traffic in bills, and puts his name on it, the broker having indorsed it before for a very good reason, because his name, being on the back of the bill, prevents him being called as a witness on a *qui tam* action for usury. The second tradesman, who now holds the bill, indorses it also. Now, there is the name of the drawer of the bill, the broker's name, and the two tradesmen's names, on the bill; these make four names. The last-mentioned tradesman, being in want of cash, goes to some attorney who is in the constant habits of purchasing such bills: when he comes to the attorney and shews him the bill, telling him he wants money for it, the attorney *never* examines the *face* of the bill, but looks directly on

the back of it, to see how many names are there indorsed. If there are three names, it is a matter worthy of his attention ; if four, it is excellent, that making five names with the drawer's. At first he pleads poverty ; but at last tells him that the drawer of the bill is not a punctual man in payment of bills, and that most likely he shall have some time to wait for his money ; in short, that he cannot give him above ninety pounds for the hundred pound bill. This the tradesman very readily takes, he having, by the bad quality of the goods he sold, if he was the first discount, made already from thirty to forty *per cent.* or has purchased it at an inferior price of the former tradesman ; but, in general, these men, who give large quantities of goods, and but a small part in cash, are many of them connected intimately together, and

mutually pass each other's bills backwards and forwards, with mutual indorsements. But, to return to the attorney: when the bill is due, if not paid at the day, a process is commenced, and a writ civilly issued for form's sake; for these polite attornies are too well bred to arrest the drawer of the bill in the street; but inform him, in a very civil letter, that he is sorry he cannot give time on the bill, being directed by his client to enforce payment, (the client, observe, reader, is no other than his own dear self,) therefore respectfully requests that you will favour him with the name of your solicitor, that he may undertake for you to put in bail, as it is far from his intent to serve you publicly with an arrest.—You have now to thank him for his polite method of doing business, and send him the name of your solicitor. Bail is shortly



put in ; and if it is not in your power to pay it in a term, bail above must be put in, and bail must be justified ; and, when you take the bail up, you must pay four costs exclusive of your own ; and there is no means of avoiding these four *extra* costs, unless you let *judgment go by default*, which if you do, you must be prepared with the money to pay the principal sum of the bill and your own *single* costs, or your person is taken in execution, which is the *ne plus ultra* of the law, and your body may be committed to Newgate. If you defend the action by various ingenious methods, such as *sham plea, writ of error*, and some other very clever inventions, you may postpone the payment of the bill for many months ; but, at the final arrangement, when neither sham nor fudge can avail any longer, then you must be



contented to pay four costs exclusive of your own ; which, indeed, is tolerably moderate, as I have given you one instance in the foregoing pages, in which an attorney made a lady pay eight or nine costs, and every one of them were *special originals*, and each ten pounds expence ; but he was a jewel of an attorney, and as transcendant in real honour as a brilliant is to a rose diamond, to the rest of his fraternity.

You now see, reader, how great an object it is to an attorney, who buys a bill of a tradesman, to have four or five names indorsed on the back of it, otherwise it is not worth his having ; nor does he think it worth negotiating, if there is a probability that the drawer will punctually pay it at the day when it is due : the attorney, after all, runs no risk, even if the drawer of

the bill should run away, for he can come upon the indorsers.

But, to come to the story, which is not without amusement :—A friend of mine, who was not always, as well as myself and many others, rigidly punctual in taking up his bills at the hour when due, discounted a bill in the preceding manner: there were four or five names on the back of the bill, which made it very eligible: an attorney readily purchased this bill. The morning when due, it was presented at his house with the accustomed notice left in writing :—“ *Your bill for 100l. lies due at Messrs. ———, bankers\*. Please to call this day between the hours of three and five.*”—My friend, that day, a happy

\* Oftentimes the attorney announces that the bill lies for payment at his house or chambers.

day for him, but a day of disappointment to the attorney, was, per chance, more in cash than usual, and sent his servant with the money, between three and five o'clock, to take up the bill; which he did, and brought it to his master cancelled.

A few weeks after, the same tradesman, who sold this bill drawn on my friend to the attorney, called again on him with another bill drawn on the same gentleman, asking him to discount it. The moment he saw on whom the bill was drawn, he threw it with indignation on the floor, saying, "I am astonished, Sir, at your offering me such a bill; I will have nothing to do with that gentleman's bills, for the last, which I gave you money for, to oblige you, *was paid the day it was presented.*" — The tradesman, much to his mortification, was obliged

to depart without getting cash for his bill, and had the trouble to seek for some other attorney who *dealt in bills*, to whom the unusual punctuality of my friend was not yet known.

Reader, I trust this story has given you some pleasure ; and I assure you, on my word, it is a fact. For the veracity of the following interesting account of a distinguished junto in this town, I cannot be altogether so responsible ; but, on my honour, I have heard it from good authority, and I believe the general outline of their transactions to be true.

A few years past there existed in this town a truly philanthropic money-lending society : it consisted of about five or six reputable tradesmen, two attorneys, and one bailiff. I have had the honour

of knowing them all personally; and with the three latter, the two attornies and the bailiff, I have been on a very familiar footing, and through them have experienced the philanthropy of the society to the amount of many and many hundreds of pounds. This distinguished society (pardon the vulgarity of the expression!) all *rowed in one boat*, passing bills from one to the other to multiply the names on the back of the bills, till at last they were placed in one of the attornies hands, by whom they were ultimately consigned to the care and attention of the bailiff. I have been informed that they even shared in the perquisites of the bailiff: but I do not believe it, because his fees are so trifling that it would not be sound policy in these able financiers to partake of so small a part of the profits, and let the bailiff share with them

in the greater. In my opinion he could not have had any share in the profits, excepting the expence of the arrest and those incurred in his house, unless he placed money to the general account: in this manner he might pull an oar in the boat also. This amiable society is totally broken up and dispersed, by the devil having wanted one of the attornies to transact special business in the infernal courts, and by the other respectful limb of the law having retired, *otio cum dignitate*, into the country on an handsome fortune, acquired by costs upon bills of exchange, and costs charged to distress debtors, there to await the call of his infernal majesty; for two such able men he will not admit at the same time in his dominions. The devil even dreads their power, and stands in awe of their unparalleled skill and abilities.



For the present I shall say no more relative to the King's Bench, or of attornies, but promise the reader to give him, in a *Third Volume*, which will be soon published, a more minute account of that prison, and a complete investigation of the conduct of attornies to debtors, with other circumstances relative to the police of the King's Bench.

1890

1891

1892

1893

1894

1895

1896

1897

1898

1899

1900

1901

1902

1903

1904

1905

1906

1907

1908

1909

1910

## CHAPTER V.

*Interesting Particulars relative to COL.  
GEORGE HANGER when in America ;  
being a Continuation of his Life and  
Adventures.*

IN about three months after I was appointed a captain in the Hessian Yager corps; and in the middle of the ensuing month of March, I sailed from Portsmouth for America.—Reader, be not alarmed! I am not going to fight over again the American war; it is as much forgotten as the Trojan war, and the recital of the one would be full as interesting to the public as the other. It is, however, my intention to relate some incidents relative to myself, which, in the history of my life, are necessary to be mentioned.

I had not been arrived above two months in America, when I received a letter from my mother, (the best and kindest of parents,) informing me that Mr. Wyatt, soon after my departure, and before he could parcel out my estate, had been seized with a paralytic stroke, which, she was fearful, would shortly prove fatal to him. She informed me at the same time, that the mortgagee was endeavouring to foreclose the mortgage on my estate, and to sell it. She also sent me a fresh power of attorney for me to execute, to empower her, and some friend jointly with her, to transact my affairs, as she was fearful my worthy friend Mr. Wyatt would never be well enough to act for me. This fresh power of attorney I forwarded by the first packet to England, to my mother. In the mean time, my worthy friend Wyatt, recovering a little

from the effects of the paralytic stroke, neglected not; the moment he was able to go down to my estate, to arrange every thing for sale ; but a second visitation of his disease put an end to his valuable life.

During the interval between his death and the arrival of the fresh powers of attorney from America, for my mother and her friend to act for me, which, in passing and repassing, took up some months, the mortgagee foreclosed the mortgage ; and all that my mother could do was in vain, for my estate was sold before a Master in Chancery, at public auction, for little more than half its real value.

The reader will be pleased to remark, that the very circumstance which rendered me happy and satisfied on my leav-

ing England, by having placed my affairs in so worthy and able a friend's hands, proved my ruin, from my want of caution in not putting the name of some other person jointly in the power of attorney I gave to Mr. Wyatt: had I so done, as I have been informed, from the best authority, it would not have been practicable to have foreclosed the mortgage; but I never dreamed of Mr. Wyatt being struck with a fit of apoplexy; for he was a hale, hearty man, and by no means advanced in years, though he was of a corpulent habit. Some months afterwards, the common process of law having taken its course, my estate was sold, as I have already mentioned.

It is also necessary to relate, that, in the intermediate time, and previous to the sale, war with France and Spain was de-



clared, in addition to that wherein we were engaged with America, which was the occasion of land falling above one-third in value. In short, my estate was sold for sixteen thousand and some few hundred pounds; though, if I could have kept it till the peace, it would have fetched between twenty and thirty thousand.

In addition to this piece of good news, my kind mother informed me, that some outstanding debts, amounting to several hundred pounds, remained unpaid, notwithstanding the security Mr. Wyatt had given for me; and that executions had been introduced into my house, after his death, from the great deficiency of the sale of the estate. Thus I at once found myself several hundreds worse than nothing, instead of not owing a shilling, and having

eight or ten thousand pounds in hand, as Mr. Wyatt assured me, and which he certainly would have accomplished, had not the French war broke out, or a legal compulsion forced me to sell my estate during that period.

I now, indeed, and in truth, became a soldier of fortune, for I was stripped and plundered of every thing, and, which was worse, left encumbered with debts.

After serving the first campaign in the Hessian Yagers, my old and worthy friend, Sir Henry Clinton, requested the Commander in Chief of the Hessian troops to give me, in addition to my Yager company, the command of two hundred men selected from the Hessian regiments, which he was so kind as to comply with; and, in addition to that re-

quest, he permitted a certain number of men from every Hessian regiment to turn out volunteers. As soldiers, who have been confined to the regular duty of a battalion in the line, are ever desirous of serving with light troops at the out-post, it may be easily imagined that these men were the *eliti* of the Hessian infantry. This favour was much approved of by my commanding officer, Colonel De Wurmbe, as it not only increased his command, but strengthened it by the addition of a body of men with bayonets, who might by night be employed to greater effect than the Yagers, who had no bayonets, and were armed only with rifle-guns. A further and most singular favour was granted me on this occasion. If any man behaved ill, or of whose conduct I disapproved, I was permitted to send him back to the regiment to which

he belonged, and to have another sent to replace him. This was productive of such good order, that, during three campaigns, I never was under the disagreeable necessity of punishing any one of them, further than by a few days' confinement.— With the additional command to my Yaeger company I continued to serve until the great expedition to the southward was undertaken by Sir Henry Clinton, to accomplish the reduction of North and South Carolina, of which I shall make mention in proper time; but, prior to that, I must advert to incidents in which I was personally and most materially concerned.

Shortly after the arrival of Lord Carlisle, Mr. Eden, and Governor Johnson, at New York, they published a proclamation, in the name of the King, addressed

to his Majesty's revolted subjects, and the different United States. It was judged proper, for form's sake, that the Commander in Chief should forward this proclamation by land, from the out-posts of the army, to Congress; and that the Admiral should dispatch a vessel with the same to Philadelphia. This proclamation was sent to the out-post of the Yager corps, to my commanding officer, Col. De Wurmbe, with orders to him to forward them by a flag of truce to the most contiguous advanced post of the American army.

I was the only Englishman in that corps: my friend Col. De Wurmbe, therefore, requested me as a favour (it not being my turn for duty) to go out with these proclamations, and assigned as his reason for desiring me to undertake



this business, that, as the other officers did not understand the English language, some mistake might take place from their not being able to explain matters, and converse with the American officers. Col. De Wurmbe certainly could have commanded me on this service; but to comply with a request, or even a hint from him, was but a small tribute of gratitude for me to pay to so good and amiable a man, as well as so kind a friend. It was, therefore, with the greater pleasure that I undertook this duty; but not without foreseeing the disagreeable consequences attendant on it, by which I might have lost my life, and in the most unpleasant manner for a soldier and a gentleman.

I was perfectly aware of the temper of the Americans at that period, elated as



they were by the succours which *their great and good ally* had already sent, and promised still to send them \*. A French fleet being off the coast, some French troops having been already landed and marching to join General Washington's army, and others coming from the West Indies, it was most natural to imagine that they would reject all proposals from the British Government, not only with scorn, but contempt. I, therefore, told Colonel De Wurmbe, on my taking leave, that I would endeavour to stay as short a time at the American out-post as possible, merely to demand a receipt, and push back with all expedition ; for I was confident, if I remained a sufficient time for them to deliberate, that I should be

\* Count D'Estaing had blocked up New York harbour for some time, and was then gone for Rhode Island.

stopped and made a prisoner. The event proved the truth of my conjectures.

I must here observe, that the trumpeter and mounted Yager that went with me, carried several hundred printed copies of this proclamation for me to distribute, as I went along, at the country-men's houses, and in the towns through which I passed. In Ferry-town, situated fourteen miles from our out-posts, I distributed some hundreds. About three or four miles farther, beyond Ferry-town, I fell in with a patrolle of light dragoons, who carried me to their officer at a house close by, who commanded about fifty men. I gave him thirteen packets, one addressed to every State, and one to General Washington. On reading a printed copy, he told me he did not know whether it was proper for him to receive such

papers, and that it was necessary for him to send to know the commands of General Scott on that subject, who lay at the distance of about four miles. I told him I was commanded to leave them at the first American out-post that I should fall in with : and, with an air of *non-chalance*, I added, that, if he did not choose to receive them, I should leave them with the landlord of the house : but that it was but common politeness from one officer to another, to give me an acknowledgment under his hand that I had left them at the house, merely to shew my commanding officer that I had done my duty, as I might otherwise be very severely reprimanded on my return to the British army, and perhaps put under arrest. In short, after a good deal of persuasion, and telling him that the proclamation, whatever it contained, was

nothing to him or to me, as it came from the British Commissioners, and that certainly I should, in a similar case, not hesitate one moment in giving him a receipt; I procured a receipt from him, and, taking a polite leave of him, rode off for our army with no small degree of speed and pleasure. A few minutes after, he dispatched an officer with the proclamations to General Scott, but not before I had given every soldier who came round me one of them.

On my return through Ferry-town, there were above two hundred persons collected together, and I was under some apprehensions that they would have stopped me, as a few armed militia amongst them said they knew not what business I had to deliver printed papers inviting the citizens of America to desert the Congress,

I told them that I was under the sanction of a flag of truce, and had done nothing but what the inhabitants requested. The populace were nearly all in favour of me, and requested me to continue my distribution of the papers, which I did ; and absolutely went so far, at their request, as to read one to the people as I sat on my horse ; and nailed one up against the public house before I departed. I knew very well, from the distance General Scott was, that I could not be easily overtaken, and that I had near an hour to spare. I then made the best of my way home, and met with a strong patrolle of our corps within two miles of the town, when I returned, without further interruption, to the camp.

This very day the Admiral sent Lieu-

tenant Heele in a cutter to Philadelphia with counterparts of the same packets which I had carried out. The moment he cast anchor in the river Delaware, the lieutenant and his whole crew were made prisoners ; and Lieutenant Heele remained above a year in Philadelphia jail ; and I should have been sent there also, and have kept him company, had I waited to receive General Scott's commands ; who, in a very few days afterwards, as I learned from the communication we held at the out-posts, had sent orders to detain me ; but fortunately the bird was flown.

I should never have thought of mentioning the following circumstance, had not my character, both as an officer and a gentleman, been most grossly aspersed by the infamous Philadelphia and Connecti-



cut Journals on that subject. The following is a correct statement of the whole business—So help me God!

The Commander in Chief, after having given orders to General Prescott to evacuate Rhode-Island, destroy the works, and repair with the troops to New York, was induced, a few days after he had sent those instructions, from certain events that took place, to countermand these orders, and sent me to Rhode-Island for that purpose, giving me instructions to examine two particular works; and, if I found them not destroyed, or capable, by a few days' labour, of being put in their former state, General Prescott was by no means to evacuate the island. I sailed in the Delaware frigate, Captain Mason; and although it is not above an hundred and eighty miles from Sandy Hook, I was

seven days on my passage, being forced to work up close under Long-Island, in the very teeth of the wind, as it blew very fresh throughout the whole course of it.

On the seventh day, in the evening, just at dusk, the frigate cast anchor about one mile and an half from the island, off the mouth of the harbour. On our approach, there were two small armed sloops working out of the harbour; but, on seeing the frigate, they immediately put back. This gave us strong suspicions that they were enemies, and that the island was evacuated; but, as there were small rivers and creeks on the opposite shore of Connecticut, it was possible that they might come from thence, and not from Rhode Island. I consulted with my friend, Captain Mason, on the

occasion, who was clearly of opinion, that, from the length of our passage, we were arrived too late, for that the island was evacuated. I was of the same sentiment : yet, as there was a chance that it might not be so, as, when frigates arrive, they always send their boat in, and the General might not think it necessary to send a boat off from shore till the next morning ; I suggested to Captain Mason how very absurd I should appear were I to return to New York, and there find that the troops had not left the island at the time I had arrived ; stating to him, at the same time, the magnitude of the business on which I was employed, and that I should never dare to shew my face before Sir Henry Clinton, if I did not do every thing that depended on myself : I was, therefore, anxious to risk any danger in order to investigate the object of

my commission. I accordingly requested him to give me an armed boat, being determined to land in the dark, and gain intelligence.

Captain Mason, in compliance with my earnest solicitation, gave me his ten-oared barge, two marines, a cockswain, and one of his lieutenants; so that we consisted of fifteen persons. I timed it so as to enter the harbour just at the latter end of the flood-tide, so that we might have the tide with us on returning. On my departure from the ship, he told the lieutenant strictly to obey my orders, and do every thing I commanded. At the same time, being sensible of the danger which I encountered, he requested me to act with the utmost prudence and circumspection, for that he would not, for ten thousand guineas, have that boat's crew

lost or taken prisoners, as they had attended on his person, as barge-men, during the whole war. The boat was well armed; every man had a musket and bayonet, with cutlass, pistols, &c. &c. and plenty of ammunition. With oars *muffled*, I approached the harbour in silence, keeping close under the shade thrown on the water by the high craggy rocks on the right; by which, and the darkness of the night, we were so impervious to the view, that a sloop working out of the harbour, absolutely, when she tacked about, was not above one hundred and fifty yards from the boat, and could not perceive us. We lay on our oars till she had completely tacked and stood half way over to the other side, when we proceeded, and brought the boat to shore directly under the High Bluff of Brinton's Point, and not far from the battery. A



boat might have passed us within thirty yards, and not have perceived us. I then landed with the two marines only, who had sailors' blue jackets over their red ones to conceal the red and white uniform, and who were ordered to follow me closely, to proceed when I proceeded, and to lie down flat on the ground when I fell down. We then crawled up the precipice, so as to be able to look just above the summit, and remained some time in that position, to observe and determine how I was to proceed. I heard the sentinels challenge every now and then, and cry "*All is well*;" for they were quite on the alert, having observed a man-of-war anchor off the harbour, as I was afterwards informed. At last a patrol from the nearest picket, which, from the fire, I judged was not above three hundred yards from me, passed me so near that I could dis-



tinctly hear them speak ; and I heard two sentinels challenge the patrole, one on my right, the other on my left. I knew, when the patrole was passed, that I had little to fear, and that I could easily, from the darkness of the night, pass between them. I accordingly ran across the road they went down, and, when over in the next field, which was very rough and bushy, I laid the marines down and sat up myself, in order to set the position of our boat by the seven stars in the north, the pointers of which point to the north polar star, which is immoveable. This every officer, especially of light troops, should be well acquainted with : if I had not known it, I might have been easily taken prisoner in wandering along the cliff in search of the boat on my return.

I then looked about for a house from

which I might take some person to gain intelligence, and fixed my eye on two, about a mile distant, as well as I could judge by the lights in them, and quite at a distance from any others. There were several nearer me, but they were too contiguous to the pickets and patrols along the shore, to suit my purpose. With great caution, and always laying down when I heard any thing, I approached them; they were about two hundred yards apart: in the one I saw two lights, in the other only one; I, therefore, made up to the latter, and laying the two marines down among the cabbages in the garden, I stood about ten yards from the door, at the garden gate, and halloed out—"Holla! house!" when an old woman came to the door, and asked what I wanted, and who I was? I replied, "I am an officer come from town, and am ordered

over to Connecticut\* by the General, on business. I have lost my way in the dark, and want to be put into the path† to Brinton's Point : pray send some one to the end of the garden to put me into it." She replied, " One of our family is gone to town, and the other is gone to bed ; but if he is not undressed, I will send him to shew you." I had previously determined with my two faithful marines, if I could not entice any one person out of the house, to enter it and take some one away by force ; but I dreaded the consequences, knowing that if resistance was made, we should be obliged to shed blood in our own defence. My stratagem succeeded completely : out came a

\* The name of the opposite shore from Rhode-Island.

† This is the cant term the New England people have for all roads ; whether little or great, they call them all paths.

fine young fellow, as straight and as tall as a poplar tree. The moment I saw him on the steps, I said, "Come along, my good man, just put me into the path to Brinton's Point, and I will give you a dollar."

I retired a few yards from the garden gate, which he passed; and when at a sufficient distance from the house, I took him fast by the coat, and, putting my pistol to his head, told him to look behind him at the two marines, who had their bayonets pointed within two feet of his body. I then charged him not to speak, pledged my honour to him that I would not hurt him; but if he uttered a word, should he hear any soldiers passing, he would be killed, and we must endeavour through the darkness of the night to make our escape. I took him

into a rough place close by, and made him sit down by us. I then told him I was a British officer, not an American, and was landed from the frigate, that lay off the harbour, to gain intelligence. I now gave him a half johannes, and repeated my assurance that I would treat him well ; but that he must come along with me. His fears at length subsided, and he told me that the day before I arrived the British had evacuated the island, and that an American force of three thousand men now occupied it.

The marines judging with me that the tide of ebb had made, and that the moon would rise in about an hour, we proceeded to the boat, walking alongside of this man, with my hand fast in his right hand jacket pocket : for I knew too well to trust to a New Englandman's promises ;



had he got a yard start of us, he would have alarmed the whole country.

When I had proceeded within about four hundred yards of the rock from whence I landed, I had the same road to cross again on which I had seen the patrole pass. As we lay down on one side of it, waiting for the passing of a patrole, that I might hear where the sentinels were, my guide endeavoured to betray me, telling me there was no danger if I went up the path : I knew better, and now no longer trusted him ; but put it out of his power to do any mischief, by taking my pocket handkerchief and stuffing the greatest part of it into his mouth, that he should not vociferate. At the same time I made one of the marines hold him fast by the left hand, whilst I held him as fast by the right.



When the patrolle had passed, we crossed the path, and, on arriving at the brink of the precipice, I had, by keeping my eyes constantly on the north stars, set the boat with such precision that when I holla'd, "*Mason, a-hoy!*" I was answered directly beneath where I stood, "*Hanger, a-hoy!*" which were the signal words fixed on before our departure. I got my gentleman into the boat, and rowed out of the harbour; and the moon did not rise before we were quite clear of it. Every thing turned out well; the tide and rising of the moon was well timed, and with no inconsiderable degree of pleasure I arrived on board the Delaware frigate, to the great joy of my friend Captain Mason. Unfortunately it was not possible to land this man on the opposite shore, or to send him back to Rhode Island. Captain Mason therefore

proposed putting him the next day on shore on Block Island, a few leagues from Rhode Island ; but the fog proved so thick, that we could not make it with safety. We therefore stood out to sea, and I was compelled to take him with me to New York. On our arrival there, I provided him with quarters, drew provisions for him, and supplied him with necessaries. It was intended that he should be sent by the first flag of truce to Rhode Island, or by the first boat to New London, or some town contiguous to his home in New England ; but he had not been six days in New York, when he sickened of the small-pox, and died of that distemper.

The sudden disappearance of this man certainly wore an aspect of suspicion, which gave room to many unpleasant

conjectures. The fact, however, being known, that he had been taken away by force off the island, and his never appearing there again, was productive of many reports, all infamously false, and detrimental to my character. In various shapes and forms was this transaction related, both in the Connecticut and Philadelphia newspapers, whose principle was to render odious, in the eyes of the country, any officer who possessed the smallest degree of enterprize or resolution. It was stated first, that this man was murdered on the island ; and afterwards, that he was thrown overboard at sea. But, after some time, it being publicly known at New York that I had necessarily brought him there, and treated him with kindness, a more just account was published ; but still it was added, that this man had been thrown into prison, where he died of the

jail fever. I have pledged myself solemnly to the fact, and should not have troubled the reader with the minute particulars, was it not absolutely necessary to state them, to justify my character as a soldier and a gentleman.

From my having been absent from New York so many days, indeed above double the time usually required to make that passage, (for the wind was foul nearly the whole way back, as well as going there,) I was given over for lost. Some imagined that the frigate had sailed at night into the harbour and was taken, though such croakers little knew the abilities and judgment of Captain Mason; while others supposed that I had landed and was made prisoner. I arrived, however, to set aside all conjecture, just as Sir Henry Clinton was at dinner with

fourteen or fifteen officers at table, none of whom, that I recollect, are living, except my old friend, Sir Thomas Wallace, who was one of the company, and is well acquainted with this circumstance.

After relating the whole affair, at table, to Sir Henry Clinton, and receiving his thanks in the kindest manner, I never shall forget, to the last day of my life, a very singular remark of his, nearly in the following words: "I commend ~~your~~ prowess much; but at the same time, I am sorry you risked so much, as it was not in my wish you should venture so far: for, upon my word, my dear Hanger, I believe if they had taken you on the island, they would have hanged you directly." I replied, "My dear General, that never entered into my head, it being a thing totally impossible for the Americans to commit such an outrage on an



officer sent by you, in character of an aid-de-camp, with orders to our commanding officer at Rhode Island. I could be subjected to no other danger but of being imprisoned ; they could not surely be guilty of such an act." " You may," replied the General, " think so, Hanger ; but I give you my word I do not, for I know not what they would not do : and I am happy to see you returned safe." At this time my worthy and intimate friend, Major André, aid-de-camp to Sir Henry, was sitting at table ; the same who suffered some time afterwards, and of whom I shall have cause to speak hereafter.

Nothing of consequence, or of peculiar notoriety in the history of my life, took place, worthy to be related, until the great expedition sailed from New York for the reduction of the Southern Provinces, except various military incidents



and occurrences, in which I acted an inferior part, on the great theatre of the war, by no means interesting to the reader, who long ago must have been heartily tired of every thing relative to that subject, and it is very distant from my intention to trouble him with it. A repetition of the Trojan war, in my humble opinion, would be equally as amusing.

Before I pass to the southward, and relate my adventures in Georgia, South and North Carolina, I must mention a singular reverse of fortune which I now suffered. The Devil and Mammon had already conspired to ruin me, and had ransacked and plundered my property in my absence, by compelling the sale of my estate at auction, from the fatality of my agent's death, at a time

when lands were one-third less in value than they were before the war or after. Fortune, that fickle goddess, not satisfied with having already turned her wheel from me and my interests, again destined me to be the object of her caprice and neglect. I received a letter from my sister, Mrs. Vansittart, whose tender love and regard for me is deeply imprinted in my breast, informing me that the Duchess of St. Alban's (my godmother) was dead. She had made a will in my favour, that was witnessed by my mother, in which she made me heir to her whole property, to a very considerable amount. Within the last twelve months of her death, a Mr. Roberts came over from Ireland. She had never seen him before, or ever heard of him. He, however, proved, to her Grace's satisfaction, that he was related to her; so

that she reversed her intentions, made a new will, and left every thing to him. Her second will only bore date six months prior to her death ; had she died seven months sooner, I should have inherited a considerable property, and a great addition after the Duke's death, who was then living. The Duchess of St. Albans was a Miss Roberts, a rich heiress: her parents and her near relations dying when she was very young, my father received her into his family, educated and protected her : out of his family she married the Duke of St. Albans ; she stood god-mother to me, and lived in the strictest intimacy and friendship with our family. It was but natural to believe that she would have left some part of her property to our family ; but thus she in gratitude repaid my father and mother for their tender care and attention to her

for many years, by leaving her whole property to a gentleman with whom she never had any acquaintance till about a year before her death. With what great expectation some people look forward to dead men's and dead women's shoes: but those who do may go bare-footed all their lives. I never expected a guinea from her, therefore suffered no disappointment; for my mother, although she was one of the witnesses to the Duchess's will, which was made before I sailed for America, never, even in the most distant manner, intimated it to me. As I never had buoyed myself up with any hopes of advantage from her, I suffered no mortification on the occasion, though I could not but reflect on the bitterness of my fortune, that, within six months, my interest should have suffered so materially, having been fixed on by her Grace to be

her heir, and had never given her cause to withdraw her former good opinion. But fate had decreed this, together with many other mortifications, miseries and distresses, which I was destined to suffer. Doomed as I was to a life chequered with misfortunes, by a Supreme Power, that same Power gave to me a vigorous constitution, and a bold and undaunted mind, to stem the current of adversity, and bear up against a sea of troubles.

When the expedition from New York took place for the reduction of the Southern Provinces, my worthy friend Sir Henry Clinton fulfilled the promise he had made me, of giving me a command : It consisted of the two hundred picked men from the Hessian army, Col. Emerick's company of riflemen commanded by Captain Abthouse, and about sixty German



**Jagers.** On their arrival at Savannah in Georgia, some companies of Provincial light infantry were to be added to the above men ; and, at my own request, I was to join my corps to that of my most intimate, affectionate, and deceased friend Col. Ferguson, an officer whose distinguished merit and gallantry is well known to the British army. The above-mentioned men were put on board the ship *Anne*. In the violent gale of wind, which arose about five days after we quitted the harbour of New York, (Sandy-Hook,) this ship ran foul of another in the night, and carried away both her main and mizen masts ; of course, having but the foremast remaining, she was compelled to put before the wind, and make every wind a fair one. She found herself unable to make either the American coast, or bear down upon the West Indies ;



therefore, putting the troops and crew to a shorter allowance, bore away right before the wind, it then blowing hard at north-west, and the first port she made was St. Ives in Cornwall. The oldest navigator must acknowledge this as a most singular event—a ship dismasted, bound for Georgia, and driven to England.

The kindest inquiries after my health were made (as I have since been informed) by some of those philanthropic gentlemen who had shared in plundering me of my estate, on their hearing that a corps of soldiers, commanded by Major Hanger, were arrived from America at St. Ives in Cornwall. However, the mutual happiness which both parties would have reciprocally enjoyed at meeting, was for that time prevented, by my having sailed on

board the ship John, at the particular request of my worthy friend Sir Henry Clinton, to see that proper attention was paid to three favourite horses of his during the voyage, which were placed under my particular directions. Thus did I escape being driven to England, by which I should have been obliged to have taken a passage once more over that small herring-pool to America to join the army, beside the good fortune, perhaps, of falling in with some one of those tender-hearted gentlemen who were so kindly interested in my health, and experiencing from them the pleasure of a familiar tap on the shoulder.

This was a fortunate event for the soldiers in the ship Anne, who escaped, by this singular event, the miseries of ill

health, to which all those are doomed who are fated to serve in those intensely hot and sickly climates, whose baneful influence is known only to those who have experienced it. To me it was a misfortune, as it deprived me, for some length of time, of the command of a corps of light troops, so desirable an object to all officers.

My worthy friend Sir Henry Clinton, until an opportunity presented itself of employing me more actively, honoured me, during the siege of Charlestown, by continuing me in his family as one of his aides-de-camps. Before I quit New York altogether, I must relate a circumstance that had nearly cost me my life. The Commander in Chief had fallen down to Sandy Hook, preparatory to his sailing with the army, and had desired me to re-

main in New York till the next day, to bring some papers of consequence to him from his secretary, which were not then finished; and, having received them, I thought of the best means of proceeding to the Hook myself. The transports had all dropped down for some days; and I could not, even in all the river, find a sloop or schooner for my purpose; I, therefore, pressed a strong row-boat, with two men, from the Flymarket-stairs, and proceeded on my way to the Hook. The frost had set in intensely severe for two or three days, so that vast sheets of ice floated up and down the channel with the tide. Before I had got half-way to Staten-Island, the eddy-tide, from round the back point of it, drove several large sheets of ice into the channel, in which my boat got completely entangled; and

we could find no way out, the ice approaching nearer to us every moment. At this instant, Mr. Hamilton, a gentleman in the quarter-master and transport service, was fortunately going down from the dock-yard, in a very strong large sloop. Mr. Hamilton, seeing a boat in distress, surrounded by the ice, and endeavouring to find her way out, knowing the danger we were exposed to, very humanely bore down upon us, breaking, by the force of his vessel, through the flakes of ice. I was on a very intimate footing with Mr. Hamilton, but knew not who my deliverer was until I came within fifty or sixty yards of him. He was astonished how I could have been so imprudent as to attempt passing down the river amongst the ice in a row-boat. I told him I had been warned of the danger, and knew it at my



departure, but I could get no sloop or schooner; and, as the papers were of consequence to the Commander in Chief, it was necessary he should have them, as the fleet was to sail that night; besides, I thought, as the tide of ebb ran very strong down to the Hook, I should not meet any ice in my way sufficient to block me up, as it would go the same way with me, and therefore would not greatly endanger me. Indeed I never dreamed of the shoals of ice that are hurried round the point of Staten-Island, by the eddy-tide meeting the other bodies of ice going down to the island with the ebb-tide, which completely hemmed me in between them.

Myself and one of the watermen had not stepped on board the sloop above two or three minutes, when, as the other



waterman and my servant were handing a favourite spaniel and my portmanteau out of the boat, a sheet of ice stove her nearly in two. My servant jumped on board; but the waterman slipped down, and would have been crushed between the vessel and the ice, if we had not thrown a rope to his assistance, and hauled him up. Thus I providentially escaped from a most miserable death, as I was above three miles from any shore, and must evidently have foreseen my death approaching, without any chance whatever of escaping. I arrived, however, safe at the Hook, delivered the papers to the Commander in Chief, and sailed at day-break the next morning. This happened on Christmas-eve.

Had this expedition been delayed forty-eight hours longer, the whole fleet of

transports would have been frozen fast in the river, as the frost that winter was more intense than the oldest American had ever known. Incredible as it may appear, it is an absolute fact, that in a few days it froze so intensely, that a regiment of cavalry, cannon, and wag-gons, passed from Long-Island to Staten-Island on the ice, over a channel so deep as to admit the largest ships in the British navy to sail up to New York.

The rendezvous of our fleet was at Savannah in Georgia, where I arrived after a tedious passage, owing to contrary winds and the most violent storms, which dispersed a great part of the fleet: there we were obliged to remain until several ships, which had been obliged to put into the Bahama-Islands, joined us. The army then proceeded to besiege

Charlestown in South Carolina. The greatest part, under the Commander in Chief, proceeded by sea ; the other, under the command of General Patterson, by land ; and both joined their forces before that town. During the time I remained at Savannah, I had an opportunity of seeing about six hundred Indians, of the Cherokee and Creek nations, preparing and training themselves for war. This sight was very pleasing to me, having never seen any large body of Indians together before.

The Indians abstain from women, take physic, and prepare their bodies for war, by frequently running, and using other manly exercises. In one, not unlike the game we call *goff*, they shew great skill and activity. They were a very fine race of men. One of their Chiefs came

to pay his respect to the Commanding Officer at Savannah. Reader, I think his triumphant entry and dress will at least make you smile. He was mounted on a small, mean Chickesaw horse, about twelve hands and an half high : his dress consisted of a linen shirt, a pair of blue cloth trowsers, with yellow and scarlet flaps sewed down the outward seams ; over this he had on an old full-dress uniform of the English foot-guards, the lace very much tarnished ; a very large tye-wig on his head ; an old gold-laced uniform hat, Cumberland-cocked ; a large gorget round his neck ; a sword, in a belt, hung over his shoulder ; a tomohawk and scalping-knife in his girdle ; rings in his nose and ears ; his face, and breast, which was quite open, painted various colours ; and a musket on his shoulder. He was one of the most dis-

tinguished Chiefs amongst the whole Indian nations, and was called the *mad dog*. I took him for a madman ; and never laughed more heartily in my life than when I first saw him.

The beautiful red birds of that country, which are known in England by the name of Virginia nightingales, are as plentiful in Georgia as sparrows in this country. A negro man had caught a dozen of them in a trap, and offered to sell them to me for a York shilling. I might have had them, I dare say, for sixpence ; and the cock-birds are sold in London by the bird-fanciers for three guineas a-piece.

When the siege of Charlestown was finished, and the town taken, Sir Henry Clinton gave me a warrant in conjunction with my old friend Colonel Ferguson,



either jointly or separately, throughout the provinces of South and North Carolina, to regulate, inspect, muster, &c. all volunteer corps, loyal militia, and others; and to inspect the quantity of corn, cattle, &c. belonging to the inhabitants; and to report thereon to Lord Cornwallis, who commanded in the Southern Provinces. Lord Cornwallis most kindly told me, that, although I was separated from my old friend and protector Sir Henry Clinton, if it was in his power to make my situation pleasant, I had but to command him. To serve under the command of so good-tempered and brave a soldier could not but be pleasing to me, and to every other officer who is acquainted with his goodness of heart. I should be wanting in common justice, if I did not testify his kindness and protection towards me,



which, from that day to this moment, he has never with-held from me.

The power and command invested in me by this warrant was very extensive: it extended even so far as to empower me to join the race of Carolinians together in holy matrimony. This, however, requires explanation—By the laws and customs of Carolina, all justices of the peace, field officers, and colonels of the militia, had a power to marry, and did marry, the inhabitants who lived at a remote distance from a great town. In the back parts of Carolina you may search after an angel with as much chance of finding one as a parson: there is no such thing—I mean, when I was there. What they now are, I know not: it is not impossible but they may have become more religious, moral, and virtuous, since the great af-

fection they have imbibed for the French. In my time, you might travel sixty or seventy miles and not see a church, or even a schism-shop \*. I have often called at a dog-house in the woods, inhabited by eight or ten persons, merely from curiosity. I have asked the master of the house, "Pray, my friend, of what religion are you?"—"Of what religion, Sir?"—"Yes, my friend, of what religion are you, or to what sect do you belong?"—"Oh! now I understand you; why, for the matter of that, *religion does not trouble us much in these parts.*"

This distinguished race of men are more savage than the Indians, and possess *every* one of their vices, but *not one* of their virtues. I have known

\* A meeting-house.

one of these fellows travel two hundred miles through the woods, never keeping any road or path, guided by the sun by day, and the stars by night, to kill a particular person belonging to the opposite party: he would shoot him before his own door, and ride away to boast of what he had done on his return. I speak only of the back-woodsmen, not of the inhabitants in general, of South Carolina; for, in all America, there are not better educated or better bred men than the planters. Indeed, Charlestown is celebrated for the splendour, luxury, and education of its inhabitants: I speak only of that *heathen race* known by the name of *Crackers*.

Had I continued to remain in this capacity with my friend Col. Ferguson, I might have suffered the same fate as he

did at King's Mountain, where he was killed, and his corps defeated. The Americans had such an inveteracy against Ferguson, that they buried all the other bodies, but stripped Ferguson's of its clothes, and left it naked on the field of battle, to be devoured by the turkey-buzzards, a species of vulture in that country. I state this merely to shew the inveteracy of the enemy ; for it is of little consequence, in my opinion, whether a man's body be devoured by vultures, or embalmed as the Ægyptian mummies are, or buried in Westminster Abbey. If, indeed, as Mahomet is said to have done, I could take my flight to Paradise on a jack-ass, that would be a pleasant ride. But Fate destined me for other things : my friend Col. Tarleton applied for me to be appointed major to the British Legion ;

and the Commander in Chief, Sir H. Clinton, appointed me before he sailed for New York.

The reader will give me credit, I trust, for having passed through my campaign to the north so peaceably as I have done, having not dealt in the exploits of war further than was absolutely necessary to keep up the chain of my Adventures. I trust also he will applaud my humanity in not shocking his feelings: for, as yet, I have not drawn one drop of blood of the enemy; nor is it my intent. I have also studiously avoided relating all those calamities and horrors that in war are impossible to be prevented in the best-disciplined armies, some of which, were I to relate them, I assure the reader, would make his wig stand on end on his head: but a truce to murder, plunder, and deso-



lation. Let the reader be assured, if his wig is not incommoded by other circumstances, my writings shall never disturb it.

In the progress the army under Lord Cornwallis made to the upper parts of North Carolina, I caught the yellow fever at Charlottebourg. Tarleton was just recovering from it as I sickened. When the army marched from that town, myself and five officers, who had the same disorder, were put into waggons and carried with the army. They all died in the first week of our march, and were buried in the woods as the army moved on.

My sickness happened in the autumn, at which time the rainy season sets in, when small rivulets, which, generally, the soldier may walk through and not wet



him above the ancles, swell, in a few hours, to such an height as to take a man up to the neck, and oftentimes for some hours impede the march of an army. In passing several of these small brooks, the straw on which I lay in the waggon was often wetted. Kind Nature had endowed me with a constitution much stronger than the generality of mankind, or the damps I encountered must have killed me. The fatigue of travelling alone brought the other five officers, in a very short time, to their graves. I took the advantage of the escort of a regiment, which was ordered to leave the army and march down out of North Carolina to Camden in South Carolina, where I arrived safe, and all but dead. There Lord Rawdon (now Earl Moira) commanded. I had travelled over a great extent of country, in a waggon; so that from the roughness

of the roads, and the general debility of my whole frame, I was reduced to something very like a skeleton. I was, indeed, so weak that I could not turn myself, but was forced to be moved by my attendants when I wanted for ease to change my posture. In this miserable situation I lay so long, first on one side, then on the other, and then on my back, that the bones of my back and each hip came fairly, or rather freely, through the skin. I then had no other posture to lay in but on my stomach, with pillows to support me.

The reader may think that I exaggerate the miseries I suffered, for surely no man ever endured more; but, I pledge my honour, that all I relate is strictly true: but I will give additional testimony to my own; for, having the honour to dine at Lord Moira's house in St. James's

Place, about two years after my arrival in England, where his Royal Highness the Prince of Wales, Sir Henry Clinton, General Vaughan, General Crosbie, and many other officers who had served in America, were present, his Lordship could not refrain from observing how surprising it was that a man should be sitting in that company, whose bones he had absolutely seen at Camden come through his skin.—The disorder at last fell down into my legs, which, I am of opinion, saved my life ; as that moment I began to recover. Till that circumstance I had taken nothing to support me but opium and port-wine for three weeks, as nothing else would stay on my stomach. I now began to have an appetite, and by degrees I recovered ; but for a long time could not walk without the assistance of one crutch. If I do not actually owe my

life to Earl Moira, I certainly am indebted to him for the more speedy recovery of my health, from the many comfortable and nourishing things he sent me every day from his own table, which my servants could not make, and were not to be purchased; and the butcher's meat killed at that time of the year, is absolutely little better than carrion at Camden.

I was witness to the arduous task to which this nobleman, young in years, but a veteran in abilities and military science, was appointed, and from which he extricated himself with so much honour to his talents and advantage to his country.— Lord Cornwallis's army was marched into Virginia, and Lord Rawdon left to protect South Carolina, with a feeble force, against the whole power which

General Green could assemble in both the provinces; and he unquestionably (without any disparagement to the military character of General Washington) was the best and most active officer in the whole American army. From Camden I went down to Charlestown, where I found my old friend Doctor Hayes, (now Sir John Macnamara Hayes,) physician-general to our army, who assured me, that, notwithstanding the great debility I laboured under, my stamina was sound and unimpaired; and that if I would either go to sea for two or three months, and take my passage to the northward, so as to quit, for a short time, that baneful climate, I should be as good a man as I ever was, in respect to health. Captain George Montague, an intimate friend of mine, who commanded the Pearl frigate, was ordered



by the Admiral, with the Iris frigate, Captain Dawson, to cruize off the Bermuda Islands; and he kindly took me on board. I remained at sea above three months; and so beneficial was the sea-voyage, and bathing every morning in salt water, that, before three weeks were passed, I had laid aside my crutch.

During our voyage, I had the pleasure of landing at Bermudas, a beautiful spot, and the most healthy climate on the face of the whole earth. Sick persons from the West Indies and the Carolinas resort to this island for the recovery of their health. Being situated a great distance from any land, it feels not the heat of summer, from the perpetual refreshing breezes of the ocean. There are here two species of fish, uncommonly fine, and of a very luscious quality; called Grooper and



Porgey, the one equal to a john-dorie; the other superior in flavour to a carp. This island swarms with poultry, and yields the finest onions, both which are sent to the West Indies. Cedar wood is in great plenty on this island; so much so, that all the schooners and sloops are built with it: they are very light and buoyant, and sail faster than any vessels. The time for our cruise being expired, Captain George Montague bore away for the Chesapeak-bay. We made the Capes about two o'clock P. M. and were standing in to the bay. It was my intent to land at the first British port, and proceed to join my regiment, the British Legion, commanded by Col. Tarleton. A privateer, however, fortunately bore down to us, and informed us that the Count De Grasse, with a French fleet, lay at anchor up the bay.

If it had not been for this intelligence, we should have anchored at night, in the middle of the French fleet, as we imagined we should find the British fleet there.

Thus, by my being at sea for four months, did I escape being captured with Lord Cornwallis's army, as well as the being made prisoner at sea by Count De Grasse. We stood out a great distance to sea that night, in order to avoid the track of another French fleet coming from Rhode-Island to join Count De Grasse, and then made the best of our way to New York, where we heard all the particulars relative to the situation of Lord Cornwallis's army, which, in about six or seven weeks afterwards, surrendered to the joint forces of the French and Americans.

It is necessary for me to observe, that I sailed from New York with that fleet of men of war (in my friend Montague's frigate) which took on board ten thousand chosen troops, the prime of the British and Hessian forces, under the command of Sir Henry Clinton, with the intent to relieve Lord Cornwallis's army. This force, unfortunately, arrived three or four days after Lord Cornwallis's army had capitulated.

The fleet, with the troops on board from New York, finding this misfortune had befallen the army in Virginia prior to their arrival, returned to New York.— This misfortune drew the war to a conclusion.

The next year Sir Henry Clinton went home. I lost my kind protector and

friend, and the army the best of men and a most gallant soldier.—Sir Guy Carleton, now Lord Dorchester, assumed the command of the army in America. The manner in which this gallant and distinguished veteran received me, after all those officers, under whose auspices I had served the whole war, were departed for England, was highly gratifying to my feelings; and the assurances he made me, on his arrival at New York, of employing me in a very active line, (provided the war had continued,) deserves my warmest thanks.

—I cannot refrain from relating a ludicrous conversation which took place between Sir Guy Carleton and myself, one day when I had the honour of dining at head-quarters, immediately after his arrival, which strongly evinced his good

humour and affability. The great skill which, from years of practice, (even from a lad when educated in Germany,) I had acquired in the knowledge of a rifle-gun, and the precision and perfection to which I had brought the art of shooting with a rifle, was well known to the army, and Sir Guy Carleton had been informed of it. At dinner, he said to me, sitting opposite to him, "Major Hanger, I have been told that you are a most skilful marksman with a rifle-gun. I have heard of astonishing feats that you have performed in shooting!"—Thanking him for the compliment, I told his Excellency, that I was vain enough to say, with truth, that many officers in the army had witnessed my adroitness. I then began to inform Sir Guy how my old deceased friend, Col. Ferguson, and myself, had practised together, who, for skill and knowledge of that



weapon, had been so celebrated, and that Ferguson had ever acknowledged the superiority of my skill to his, after one particular day's practice, when I had shot *three* balls running into one hole.—Sir Guy replied to this, “ I know you are very expert in this art.”—Now, had I been quiet and satisfied with the compliment the Commander in Chief paid me, and not pushed this affair farther, it had been well for me ; but I replied, “ Yes, Sir Guy, I really have reduced the art of shooting with a rifle to such a nicety, that, at a moderate distance, I can *kill a flea* with a single ball.” At this Sir Guy began to stare not a little, and seemed to indicate, from the smile on his countenance, that he thought I had rather outstepped my usual outdoings in the art. Observing this, I respectfully replied, “ I see, by your Excellency's countenance,

that you seem doubtful of the singularity and perfection of my art ; but, if I may presume so much as to dare offer a wager to my Commander in Chief, I will bet your Excellency five guineas that I kill a flea with a single ball once in eight shots, at eight yards ;"—(and, reader, I will bet you fifty guineas I do ; and, what is more, the person who wagers with me shall decide the bet, to shew that there is no bubble in it.) Sir Guy replied, " My dear Major, I am not given to lay wagers ; but for once I will bet you five guineas, provided you will *let the flea hop*."—A loud laugh ensued at the table ; and, after laughing heartily myself, I placed my knuckle under the table, and striking the table, said, " Sir Guy, I knock under, and will never speak of my skill in shooting with a rifle-gun again before you."

Peace took place shortly after, when I obtained a passport, both from the Congress and the French Ambassador at Philadelphia, to repair to that city to visit my old acquaintance the Duke de Lauzun, afterwards Duke de Biron, and afterwards guillotined. I must confess, although I had a passport from the French minister and from the Congress, I was rather doubtful and diffident how I should journey across the Ferries to Philadelphia in the character of Major to the British Legion; a corps not much esteemed by the Americans. But my friend, Mr. Church, who resided many years, after the war, in England, together with Col. Wadsworth, who had acted with him as Joint-Commissaries to the French army, kindly took me under their protection to Philadelphia. These two gentlemen, in great good humour, but not without some

degree of fear and displeasure on my part, when they arrived at Princetown, invited the celebrated, pious, and well-known character, Doctor Witherspoon. To this pious man they exhibited me in such characters, that, although the Peace was concluded, I truly believe the Doctor thought his head in danger that night ; and certain I am, if he had heard that I had been within ten miles of his pious and sanctified domain, he would have buried the last silver tea-spoon he was possessed of ten feet under ground. Thus did my friend Church and Wadsworth amuse themselves at my expence : and, what is more, all they told the Doctor in good humour and in fun, playing me off before him, the pious Divine took for gospel.

I was treated with the greatest civility,

not only by the French ambassador and officers, but also with the most perfect respect, attention, and politeness by the leading families in Philadelphia, particularly by Mr. Morris the financier; also by Governor Morris, a gentleman who, I think, at that time filled the office of Secretary of State for the war department; and though he had by some misfortune lost one leg, that accident had not in the least impaired his understanding; for he was one of the most sensible, the best-informed, and most agreeable of men I ever knew: But, above all others, I here with pleasure pay that tribute of gratitude to General Dickenson \*, a distinguished of-

\* He was brother to the famous Dickenson, who was called the *Pennsylvania farmer*, from having written Letters under that name at the beginning of the unhappy differences between Great Britain and her Colonies, which instigated the people to take up arms.



fier in the American service, for the uncommon civility and attention he shewed to me: his house, replete with the truest hospitality, was open to me by night and by day: his mind was too noble, too enlightened, too expanded, to think ill of, or harbour any rancour against me or any other officer, who, by any active services, might have made themselves obnoxious to the generality of Americans. I am convinced, from my heart, that, had I been of ten times more detriment to the Americans, his respect would in proportion have increased; for he had, from an early period of the war, served his country with distinction and alacrity, and honoured those British officers who had endeavoured, to the utmost of their abilities, to serve their king and country.

I shall here relate a conversation that

took place one day at his table, before a large company ; and an opinion which I gave relative to the future destiny of the government of that country ; and I am of opinion, that the state of affairs there is rapidly hastening a dissolution of the United States. At that time, when peace had been concluded but a few weeks, I was of that opinion ; and remember well, when General Dickenson asked me my opinion of the government and of its stability, I communicated my thoughts nearly in the following words : “ Sir, as long as General Washington, and the other principal military characters and leading men in Congress, who have brought about this revolution, are alive, the government will remain as it is, united ; but, when all of you are in your graves, there will be wars and rumours of wars in this country : there are too

many different interests in it for them to be united under one government. Just as this war commenced, you were going to fight amongst yourselves, and would have fought, had the British not interfered: you then, one and all, united against us as your common enemy; but, one of these days, the Northern and Southern powers will fight as vigorously against each other, as they both have united to do against the British. This country, when its population shall be completed, is large enough for three great empires. Look, gentlemen, at the map of it: view how irregular the provinces are laid out, running into each other: look particularly at the State of New York; it extends one hundred and fifty miles in length, due north; and in no place, in breadth, above fifteen or twenty miles. No country can be said

to have a boundary or frontier, unless its exterior limits are marked by an unfordable river, or a chain of mountains not to be passed but in particular places. The great finger of Nature has distinctly pointed out three extensive boundaries to your country: the North River, the first; the Great Potamack, which runs three hundred miles from Alexandria to the sea, unfordable, the second; and the Mississippi, the third and last. When the country of Kentucky is completely settled, and the back country farther on to the Banks of the Mississippi shall become popular and powerful, do you think they will ever be subjected to a government seated at Philadelphia or New York, at the distance of so many hundred miles? But such a defection will not happen for a very long period of time, until the inhabitants of that country become numerous

and powerful\*: the Northern and Southern powers will first divide, and contend in arms."

I remember perfectly well General Dickenson's reply to my opinion: "God forbid that I should ever live to see that day, or that such a dire calamity should ever befall my country after my death! Yet I am afraid that there may be some just grounds of suspicion for the foundation of your opinions." I could not refrain from making some further observations relative to the future situation of America; for this liberal-minded man insisted on my giving my opinions without the least restraint; and I continued my discourse as follows:—"The Ameri-

\* The new country of Kentucky at that time was but in its infancy, and this day there are above eighty thousand men able to bear arms.



tans, Sir, are grateful, and ought to be grateful, to the French nation, for having assisted them to gain their independence; but I think a day will come when the Americans will have reason to curse the hour that they ever admitted a Frenchman into their country. Look, Sir, to Europe: throughout all that great continent you will find, that wherever France has gained a footing, she has ever, by the intrigues of her emissaries, embroiled those European powers in disputes and wars, and used them to her interest. She will endeavour to act the same by your nation, and make you subservient to her interests, as she has done by other nations."

I am bound in justice and truth to add the opinion of the company; and the whole of them seemed much to underva-

lue the sentiments which I entertained of the policy of the French nation : and General Dickenson replied, “ Major Hanger, in this point, relative to the French, you, in the opinion of the company, and also in my opinion, are totally mistaken ; for the counsels or influence of the French will never prevail amongst us : they can never have any influence or power with us.”—Thus the conversation ended.

The Americans, at that time, acted on the truest principles of liberty and honesty. Little did they suspect that, so young as they now are as an independent nation, (for their independency has existed only about twenty odd years,) venality and corruption should have established its ascendancy with such rapid and gigantic strides, of which we have at this day such convincing proofs: for, although the

States of America are not thirty years old, infants, they may be called, as a power, yet veterans are they in corruption and state-intrigue. I claim no greater merit for my opinions, relative to America, than is due to Mother Shipton, who prophesied that London would go to Hampstead; and we all know that it is already arrived within a few hundred yards of it.

I will risk a farther opinion relative to America: should I live to a good old age, I am confident that I shall hear of the Northern and Southern powers in America waging war with each other; when one party will solicit assistance from France; the other, from Great Britain. It will then depend on the judgment of those men who, at that period, may be at the head of the French

and British Councils, whether or not they will interfere in American disputes. In my humble opinion, it would be better for both countries to let them settle the matter amongst themselves.—I will be so bold as to offer another opinion. We should give up Canada and Nova Scotia to the Americans, provided we could make this sacrifice the foundation of an alliance offensive and defensive with the United States : then we never should be obliged to send the prime of the British army to die like rotten sheep in the West-India islands. In America we could recruit forces for the West Indies with men inured to an hot climate, who would not suffer by death and sickness in any degree equal to the new levies sent from England ; with the additional advantage of keeping our army entire and in full vigour at home. I anxiously hope

and trust I shall live to see the day when an alliance offensive and defensive will be formed between the two countries ; as Great Britain and America may defy the united powers of all Europe. Surely such an alliance between the two countries would be more advantageous and natural for both, than one with France.

One further observation, I recollect, I made at General Dickenson's table :—" In process of time, when your Western territories are perfectly settled from the Ohio to the Mississippi, which in time cannot fail to be perfected ; and when your Western and Southern Colonies become in population as numerous as the sands of the sea—then will the riches of Potosi attract the attention of the Americans to the conquest of Mexico and Peru. This is an object which, from the



magnitude of its wealth, is certain in time to take place; but, as that cannot happen for at least fifty or an hundred years, I think, Gentlemen, we should not postpone taking a part of the wealth of that country immediately; therefore I freely offer my services to the Congress on such an expedition; and, on my honour, I will serve them as faithfully as I have my king and country! for I am a soldier of fortune." So, taking the bottle, I filled a glass, and drank to an expedition against the *Golden Spaniard*. My toast was productive of much laughter, mirth, and good-humour, together with many observations on the situation and wealth of the Spanish Colonies so contiguous to them; and I am inclined to believe, that, at that time, even the company did not think that the possession of the wealth of Mexico was quite

so difficult, or required so many years' application and study as to arrive at the knowledge of the Philosopher's Stone.

Before I quit Philadelphia, I cannot refrain from mentioning the toasts which were always given after dinner at the tables of the most distinguished characters. I was invited by the President of the Congress to dinner, when he gave the following in rotation :—The Congress—Our great and good ally the King of France—The King of England—General Washington—Sir Guy Carleton. These were the standing toasts ; after which many convivial and polite ones were given. At the time that these gentlemen were toasting the King of France as their great and good ally, poor Lewis never dreamed that they were drinking a sepa-

ration to his head from his body ; but it is well known now, that the revolution which he favoured in America brought on his destruction and the revolution in France.

After my return from Philadelphia to New York, Sir Guy Carleton gave me leave to go to Nova Scotia, in order to petition the Governor of that province to allot lands for those soldiers of our regiment, the British Legion, who chose to remain and settle in America. I landed at Halifax, and from thence sailed to Port Roseway and the River Jordan ; as well as to many other places. This country may be described in a few words. In this province there is seven months' intense hard winter ; during the other five, the inhabitants live, without any intermission, in a thick fog. One hap-

piness the poor settlers enjoy, and I know of no other: In one day they can catch enough cod-fish to salt, without going above four or five miles from the shore, to supply two or three families for a twelvemonth; with a small patch of potatoes, therefore, they can never starve.

I saw nothing here worthy of observation, excepting a perpetual continuation of rocks and stoney mountains, and an iron-bound coast, frightful and dangerous to the mariner. I was very near being cast away on making Port-Roseway harbour: if the fog had not cleared up a little, in half an hour more we should have been driven by the current on the breakers; for then we were lying-to, having had a faint view of the land through the fog early that morning. From Halifax I returned to New York,

on board a frigate commanded by my old friend Captain Hawkins, now Admiral Witshead, where I remained until Sir Guy Carleton, with the troops, evacuated that country. With that fleet I took my passage for England, and arrived in the Downs after near seven years' absence.

Some months before I quitted America, when my worthy and true friend, Colonel M'Mahon took his departure for England, at his kind request I gave him a power of attorney, jointly with my friend Tarleton, to endeavour at an arrangement of my affairs prior to my arrival ; as it was agreed that, on my arrival in Europe, I should go to Calais, and there remain until I knew how the land lay in England. M'Mahon, that I



should not be in want, generously gave me a credit on his banker in London for five hundred pounds. To this friend I certainly owe all the happiness and misfortunes I have undergone; for, had it not been for his exertions, I never should have come to England, but gone to Germany, where I am certain the Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel would have requited my services in a far more satisfactory manner than this country has done. Would to God I had never, to this hour, placed my foot on British ground! I had then my half-pay as Major in the British service, which I could have received abroad; and, besides this, I had about two hundred and forty pounds per annum left me by my kind mother, which sum was then totally unimpaired. With my employment and pay as a Hessian officer in his Serene High-

ness's service, I could have lived most magnificently, and never have known distress, or have been subjected to a prison, in a land of liberty. However, Fate had decreed it otherwise.

I am at length arrived at a period in the History of my Life when I am able to testify my gratitude to a very old and intimate friend, Mr. Richard Tattersall, for his unbounded friendship towards me ; a liberality and generosity of conduct that stands unrivalled. When he heard that Colonel M'Mahon was deputed by me to endeavour to arrange my shattered and plundered circumstances, so as to enable me to live in my native country, my dear and worthy friend, old Richard, waited on Colonel M'Mahon, and joined his exertions : in fact, he took the whole burthen of my distresses on his own shoul-

ders, and employed his own lawyer to examine and investigate my affairs.

I will not trouble the reader with minute particulars, which could not be very amusing to him: but, after about two months' correspondence with me at Calais, my friend Col. Tarleton was so kind as to come over to Calais to visit me, by Tattersall's desire, as he could, in a few hours, make me more fully master of my affairs than by writing fifty letters by the post. Tarleton staid four or five days with me; nor shall I forget the letter he brought me from Mr. Tattersall, to the last hour of my life. It was as follows, and ought to be written in letters of gold:

“ My dear Major,

“ I do insist on it that you will come home directly to England, to my house, where you shall be made happy. You

have been robbed and plundered. I will bail you from every body who may arrest you ; and, if you cannot pay, I will.

“ I am, dear Major, &c.

“ RICHARD TATTERSALL.”

This letter, though very short, the reader must allow to be sweet. It is necessary I should state, that, for some years before I quitted England, I had lived, when in affluence, in the strictest terms of intimacy and friendship with this worthy old man, and had constantly kept up a correspondence with him during the whole of the American war. He proved himself one of those few men in this world who do not desert an old friend in distress,

It was agreed between Tarleton and me, before he returned to England from

his friendly visit to me at Calais, that I should not return to London until I had heard from him and Mr. Tattersall after his arrival there. In about ten days I received letters, and took my passage in the next packet for Dover, and arrived at my old friend Tattersall's house, Hyde-Park Corner, where I was received with the truest friendship, and remained under his hospitable roof for near a twelvemonth afterwards. I here held a consultation with my lawyers, when they were of opinion, from the securities I had given, before my departure from England, for every farthing I owed, that I could not be cast in any action by which I might be arrested: however, to make things more secure, my lawyers were prepared to plead the Statute of Limitations. I knew not then what that statute meant; but I do



now most thoroughly ; and I hold it disgraceful for any man to plead that statute to evade the payment of just debts ; but not in my case, plundered and stripped as I had been, and brought in debt by those who were the cause of my ruin, by compelling a sale of my estate, the particulars of which I have already related, from the unfortunate death of my agent Mr. Wyatt, who, had he lived, would have prevented all my misfortunes. While he lived, they could not have foreclosed the mortgage on my estate ; and I should have been worth ten thousand pounds, instead of being beggared and ruined. It is not for me to comment on the propriety or impropriety of my own conduct : I relate the facts ; and let the world judge me. From Tattersall's house I sallied into the world, and in a short time was arrested for be-

tween seven and eight hundred pounds: This was all that was against me. Old Mr. Richard, and his son Edmund; (now my friend, the present Mr. Tattersall,) were my constant bail.

I brought the actions into court; and, the first cause I tried, the jury never left the box, nor even consulted together for more than a couple of minutes, and gave a verdict for me: after which, all the rest withdrew their actions, of which, I believe, there were nine or ten.

My lawyers being prepared with the Statute of Limitations, as the great salvo of all, was of no material benefit to me; for the whole world knows that a jury (especially of tradesmen) will never permit any statute to be pleaded to bias their judgment, when they perceived a direct

intent of the person to defraud a just creditor ; but mine was a very different case. After I had been ruined and robbed of my estate, and plundered of my whole property, these creditors of mine were not satisfied, without endeavouring to confine my body in a jail. Thus, by compelling a sale of my estate before a Master in Chancery, from the unfortunate decease of my friend Mr. Wyatt, at a time when land was fallen full one-third in value, I was undone ; and, instead of being worth ten thousand pounds, was made about eight hundred pounds worse than nothing. I had now to begin the world again, after having served my country faithfully seven years. Had I not gone to America, I should have kept my estate to this moment ; for, while I remained in England, my creditors could not have forced a sale.

The summer after I came to England, his Royal Highness the Prince of Wales did me the honour to take me down with him to Brighton. I never shall forget the two or three first seasons I had the honour of being with him there. In all my days before and since, I never passed my time more agreeably or with greater happiness;—they were indeed the pleasantest days of my life. I had good health, good spirits; was not in debt; and had no earthly care whatever to distract my mind. But, of late years, how has Fortune frowned upon me!

If I were not to acknowledge the obligations I owe to the Prince of Wales, I should be worse than ungrateful; I should be the basest of men. In affluence, in poverty, at liberty, and when

in prison, his kindness to me has never varied : but, for one action beyond all others, I am truly indebted to him : when a prisoner, and deprived of the power of vindicating myself in public circles ; where the ever-busy tongue of calumny tried to strip me of the only wealth I possessed, my character as an officer and a gentleman ; he nobly came forward, pledging himself to the falsehood of the assertion, and stemmed the tide of public calumny, until justice and the law of the land proved the baseness of the aspersion, and covered my enemies with shame. For above sixteen years I have had the honour of his protection and acquaintance : it is hard, indeed, if I did not know him in so long a period of time, when I have viewed him in every stage, in health, on the bed of sickness, in convivial and in serious hours. This Prince is but little known to the world



at large, who judge of him from report only. What is common report, but a common prostitute? To make her the standard of truth, is as erroneous as to make the cameleon the standard of colour. A day shall come, vipers, when ye shall be compelled to swallow the poison you here spit forth. By my honour, and the sacred love and reverence I bear to truth, I am not induced to speak of him from his dignified station in life : I speak not of him as being Prince of Wales. Were he an ensign on half-pay, with no other support than that scanty pittance ; or a clergyman serving three churches for forty pounds a-year—two situations most deplorable, and the least to be envied in life—I would select him, above all mankind, for a companion and friend ; and by his judgment I would be guided in the most weighty and intricate concerns. His ene-

mies even acknowledge that he is the most accomplished and best-bred gentleman of the age ; a master of languages, and an elegant classical scholar—three distinguished qualities rarely to be met with in one man.

The year I came to England, the contested election for Westminster (Fox, Hood, and Wray, candidates) took place. The walking travellers, Spillard and Stewart, the Abyssinian Bruce, who has feasted on steaks cut from the rump of a living ox ; and various others, who, in their extensive travels, have encountered wild beasts, serpents, and crocodiles, breakfasted and toasted muffins at the mouth of a volcano—whom hunger have, with joy, compelled to banquet on the leavings of a lion or a tiger, or the carcase of a dead alligator—who can

boast of smoking the pipe of peace with the Little Carpenter and the Mad Dog—and lived on terms of the strictest intimacy with the Cherokees, the Chickesaws, and Chuctaws, and with all the *aws* and *ees* of that immense continent—who, from the more temperate shore of the Mississippi, have extended their course to the burning soil of India and to the banks of the Ganges—from the frozen north European seas to the banks of the temperate and more genial Po—may boast their worldly experience and knowledge of human life—but no one, in my humble opinion, has seen *real life*, or can know it, unless he has taken an active part in a contested election for Westminster. In no school can a man be taught a better lesson of human life than at a contested Westminster election: there can he view human nature in her

basest attire ; riot, murder, and drunkenness are the order of the day, and bribery and perjury walk hand in hand ; for men, who had no pretensions to vote, were as plenty to be found in the Garden as turnips, who, at a very moderate rate, were induced to poll. A gentleman, to make himself of any considerable use to either party, must possess a number of engaging, familiar, and condescending qualities : he must help a porter up with his load, shake hands with a fishwoman, pull his hat off to an oyster-wench, kiss a ballad-singer, and be familiar with a beggar. If, in addition to these amiable good qualities, he is a tolerable good boxer, can play a good stick, and in the evening drink a pail-full of all sorts of liquors in going the rounds to solicit voters at their various clubs, then, indeed, he is a most highly finished and

useful agent.—In all the above accomplishments and sciences, except drinking, which I never was fond of, I have the vanity to believe that I arrived nerer to perfection than any of my rivals.

I should be ungrateful, indeed, if I did not testify my thanks to those gallant troops of high rank and distinguished fame, the knights of the strap, and the black-diamond knights\*, who displayed so much bravery and attachment to our cause. By my soul, they are higher in my estimation than all the knights in Christendom together, not excepting even the Knights of Malta, with Quixote Paul at their head. At that time I formed a great intimacy with them, which has continued to this day between us, for I

\* The Irish chairmen and coal-heavers.



never forget my old acquaintances whenever I meet them, nor look upon my *old* friends with *a new face*, which is too much, in general, the custom of the world. We have shaken hands and drank together frequently since the time of our active services; and I trust I shall live to taste many a good pot more of brown stout with them: I will ever acknowledge their gallantry and honest attachment.

I was eye-witness to a very singular circumstance, which if I did not relate, I should be a very unfaithful historian:—When the numbers for Lord John Townshend began to increase rapidly on the poll, the adverse party, to delay our polling so many in the day, substituted a device to delay our exertions, and to lessen the numbers on the

poll-book, and insisted that every man who came to vote should take the test-oath. The celebrated Edmund Burke, of pensioned memory, came before the hustings to give his vote, accompanied with Peter Delmé, Esquire; when the poll-clerk for the opposite party informed Mr. Burke, that he had positive orders not to permit any person's name whatever to be entered on the books unless they had taken the test-oath. Mr. Burke began to expatiate with him on the subject, presuming, that, as he was a member of parliament, he would not insist on his taking the test-oath. But the clerk was positive, and Mr. Delmé made no objection, though he also was in Parliament, took the test-oath, and accordingly gave his vote. But when the clerk offered Mr. Burke the *Testament*, Mr. Burke, with an indignant

look, and a rage not to be described, snatched the book out of the clerk's hands, and threw it at his head : then walked indignantly away, muttering his resentment, but without giving his vote. I do not mean, by this narrative of simple facts, in the smallest degree to imply any thing more than that Edmund Burke was *very shy of the Testament* on that occasion.

I beg it may be well understood, before I proceed with remarks on the Westminster elections, that it is very far from my intent to sing a recantation of my own actions ; but, after years of cool reflection, I reflect with horror, that the capital should have been so convulsed for four or five weeks by the faction of two parties contending for power. I trust I shall live to see the time that all elections will

finish in one day, and the votes taken parochially, which would effectually prevent riot and perjury, and many other inferior crimes which at present are committed at all elections. Fine speeches every day were delivered from the hustings, endeavouring to impress the minds of the people with the freedom of elections, and how disinterestedly both parties acted for the public good, for the liberty of the people, and freedom of the nation.

I am bound in honour to render justice to each party for the STRIKING PROOFS they gave of the sincerity of their professions; as it must be admitted that they manifested it to an eminent degree by the freedom they displayed in breaking each other's heads. Of that species of liberty each were abundantly lavish,

At present I must conclude the subject of Westminster elections ; but, in my third volume, it is my intent to treat more at large on that and on all other elections.

The reader, I hope, will pardon me now for taking a very long hop, step, and jump, over a period of above twelve years of my life, more replete with anecdotes, and fully as fluctuating in circumstances, as those years I have already described. For a narrative of those twelve interesting years I must entreat their patience for a few months longer, until a third volume of my Life, Adventures, and Opinions appear before the Public : for I find these pages swelling to such a great extent that I am compelled hastily to conclude the volume, and approach that period when I surrendered as a pri-



soner to the marshal of the King's Bench prison. I am peculiarly anxious to relate my conduct when there, and the consequences which led me to suffer confinement. As I am neither ashamed or afraid of making known any thing I have done, the public shall be minutely informed of the particulars.

Prior to that circumstance taking place, it will be necessary briefly to narrate by what means I was reduced to ruin, after having got over all former difficulties; and had been blessed, not only with a comfortable, but an affluent annual income, which was much more than I had reason to expect I should have attained, after the various changes of fortune and poverty I had experienced.

For several years the East-India Com-

pany had done me the honour to employ me on the recruiting service, in this country, for their army in India. There was no salary attached to the employment : the more active my services were in behalf of the Honourable Company, the greater were my profits. I had brought this business to such perfection, that I never, any year after the first, made less than six hundred pounds profit. During the first year I intrinsically lost five hundred pounds, which was expended to set this great machine going. After having once wound up this recruiting-dial, it wanted but little regulating, which my subsequent successes and regularity proved. I had extended my communications so wide and general, that there was not a town in England, of consequence, in which I had not established a regular rendezvous. To my worthy and kind

friends, Sir Stephen Lushington and Mr. Devaynes, I am indebted for this employment. At the death of Major Weldon, who had a warrant to recruit for the East-India Company, they recommended me to succeed him. With truth I may say, that, for several years, I occupied this employment to the satisfaction of the Honourable Company and with credit to myself.

An unfortunate dispute between the Board of Controul, and the Directors of the Honourable East-India Company, took place, relative to the building of a barrack in this country to receive the East-India recruits prior to their being embarked for India. This system the India Directors opposed to a man, excepting the Chairman and Deputy Chairman. A long debate took place on this

subject (at which I was present) in the public court-room, and a very great majority, by vote, threw out the plan for erecting barracks. The Board of Controul, after that question was carried by a very great majority of Proprietors against them, thought fit to change the whole system of recruiting for the Honourable Company's army in India, and gave them recruits from Chatham barracks. This put it out of the power of the Honourable Company to employ me any longer. Thus I lost a very comfortable maintenance. It was not the loss of six hundred pounds per annum (and I solemnly declare I never made less) that I had alone to lament; but, having the honour of being employed by the India Company, I was perfectly satisfied with my occupation, and judged it as a certain employment for life; and

as such it was universally considered. The Honourable Company would never have discharged me from their service but in case of malpractices, which I trust they know I am incapable of committing. This certainty, as I looked on it, made me forego many other advantages. One, particularly beneficial, was proposed to me. A reputable army-agent, who, it is very well known, made near thirty thousand pounds in the business, proposed to me (he having a capital sufficient) to join with him in recruiting men for the new regiments which were going to be raised just at the breaking out of the war, and to be concerned together in a general agency-line. I could also have been appointed Lieutenant-Colonel to a regiment of cavalry then raising on the Continent, which, since that period, has been esta-



blished, and is now in full pay. These two objects did I relinquish: the first, from principles of honour; that, when employed by the Honourable the East-India Company, I could not engage to assist in recruiting for the line: as for the second, it was not worthy my attention to take an employment so inferior in point of emolument to the one I already possessed. I did not only suffer from losing an employment which brought me in annually above six hundred pounds; but I lost at least six years of exertion, expended to no permanent solid purpose hereafter; and, during such a space of time, an active mind, which, thanks to my God, I am endowed with! would, if this employment had not presented itself, have struck out some other equally as advantageous, and more to be relied on for its continuance; for, in so large a capi-

tal as London is, if a gentleman be not too proud to follow various occupations, he may very readily, and with not much trouble, find some employment which will prevent him from falling into the miseries of want ; although the business he undertakes may not be of sufficient emolument to render his situation affluent.

One misfortune seldom comes alone. Indeed I am convinced of it : and, my dear reader, have you not generally found it so?—I had also, for near four years, enjoyed a salary of three hundred pounds per annum, as Equerry to his Royal Highness the Prince of Wales ; which salary the arrangements made by Parliament, relative to his Royal Highness's affairs, deprived me of, by the reduction of his household. Both these losses I sus-

tained, and heavy ones they were ; nay, they were the more distressing, because the one took place shortly after the other. Thus, reader, did I lose, suddenly and unexpectedly, an income of above nine hundred pounds per annum—all at once, as it may be said. The two above employments were surely most pleasant, and much to be envied ; as the profits derived from the first sprang from an honest exertion in the service of the East-India Company ; the emoluments derived from the second employment, were given me by a personage, whom it was not only an honour, but a pleasure to serve. I have reason to complain bitterly of my misfortunes at this period of my life ; for I am of opinion there is no other instance of any person losing an income of nine hundred pounds a-year without having been guilty

of some misconduct or malpractices ; but it was my misfortune that my pecuniary resources should be subjected to events which could not be foreseen or avoided.

Once again I had risen to a state of ease and happiness, after the various misfortunes I had suffered, when I was again most suddenly reduced to the greatest distress. I had fondly brought my mind to think that I had weathered all the storms in life, and brought my vessel into a quiet snug harbour : but how was I deceived ! for the hurricane of misfortune, without giving me notice, drove me from my comfortable moorings into the troubled ocean, once more to seek the necessaries of life. I now began gradually to measure my steps towards the King's Bench ; and, on the 2d of June

1798, I surrendered to that prison, where I remained until the 6th of April 1799, on which day I was discharged.

Prior to my surrendering to the King's Bench, I was engaged in a family law-suit, which was decided by arbitration before a Master of the Court of King's Bench; by this I gained a considerable sum of money, when I compounded for my debts, and was discharged. My affairs on this occasion were settled in the following manner:—My creditors were paid seven shillings and sixpence in the pound, in cash; and I signed a bond to them to pay them the remainder in future from every property I might have to receive by will, reversion, or entail. After allotting to them the various sums assigned them, there were forty odd pounds remaining, which I took for my own use; and that was all



I reserved to myself. I therefore started again to run the course of life, with forty pounds capital stock.

And now I shall beg forgiveness if I once more introduce myself into the Rules of the King's Bench, in order to mention a circumstance which I trust the reader will believe; but if he has not faith enough in my word, I can shew him written documents, as I have preserved all the bills as brought in every Monday morning by my servant when they were paid: those bills will prove, that, on the average, I never spent above three shillings any one day during my residence in those blessed regions of rural retirement. I had two reasons for living so cheap: first, being of opinion a prisoner for debt should not be squandering money; nor should he live sumptuously, yet he

should not deny himself the necessities of life: secondly, I was determined to ascertain how cheap a gentleman could live, and want for nothing necessary to his maintenance, namely, a hearty breakfast and dinner every day. Bread and beer were cheaper at that period than at this moment; but meat was much the same. The reader must be informed that I drank nothing but porter.

Before I surrendered to the King's Bench; nay, from the very commencement of this war, I endeavoured, by every means, and by repeated applications, to be employed on active service: I even proposed to form a corps from the convicts; shewing how, after the war, they might be provided for, and not be turned adrift in the world again: And two

years before the act for that purpose took place, I suggested the permission for the militia to enlist in the regiments of the line. I also proposed to be allowed to take one thousand volunteers, at a small bounty, from the militia, and train them to the use of the rifle-gun—a science which I have made my study ever since I was sixteen years old.

Finding every channel shut up to my solicitations for employment, I then resolved to apply myself to trade, and, in May 1800, commenced coal-merchant. It has been circulated and reported, in order to injure me in my new profession, that I receive a certain sum per chaldron commission. On my honour, the report is absolutely false ! I am allowed an annual salary, which, with prudence, will keep me from want, by a generous

friend, who has undertaken this business, to serve me, and to set the trade a-going.

By the distinguished favours I have already been honoured with, by a further protection from the Public in favouring me with their commands to supply their families with coals, and by the orders which are weekly increasing, I shall, I trust, be able to relieve my friend from his anxious exertions, and to establish the trade myself, in a few months, on a solid and permanent commercial basis. *Sunt mihi deliciæ, sint mihi divitiæ, Carbones*, is my motto. May the black-diamond trade flourish with me! which, if it receives, as I trust it will, a generous support from the Public, cannot fail of success.

To a man whose affairs have been so



deranged for a long period of years, it is no small degree of satisfaction that his pecuniary obligations are confined to a very few persons. Mine are concentrated in three noble Earls—the largest sum two hundred pounds, the smallest one hundred. At the same time that I acknowledge my gratitude, it is doubly pleasing, on reflection, that their characters are so eminently respected by the world at large, as well as by me.

One singular mark of generous friendship I experienced from an old acquaintance, who had been for years acquainted with poverty, (that worst of crimes,) and who came suddenly, by the death of a near relation, to a command of money. He offered me two thousand pounds, requesting me not to think of paying him until I should be a rich man. I refused



it, on this principle—I knew I never should be able to repay him, and held it dishonest to borrow a sum so large that I never should be able to refund. I took one hundred pounds from him: he pressed the whole on me, almost to an injunction.

Twice have I begun the world anew. I trust the present century will be more favourable to me than the past.—*Valete et plaudite!*

---

---

THE END.

---

---

LIBRARY

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

ANN ARBOR

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911

1911







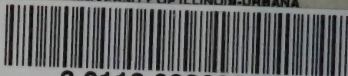








UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS-URBANA



3 0112 098692236